

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY
OU_158559

VIMUTTIMAGGA
AND
VISUDDHIMAGGA
A COMPARATIVE STUDY

BY
P. V. BAPAT, M.A., Ph.D.
*Professor of Pali, Fergusson College, Poona
Editor, Suttanipāta (Devanāgari edition)*

POONA

1937

Published by
Prof. P. V. BAPAT,
Fergusson College,
Poona 4.

Printed by
J. C. Sarkhel, at the
Calcutta Oriental Press Ltd.
9, Panchanan Ghose Lane,
Calcutta.



PROF. JAMES HOUGHTON WOODS
1864-1935

DEDICATED
To
THE MEMORY OF
My Friend and Colleague
A Great Lover of Oriental Learning
The Late JAMES HOUGHTON WOODS
Professor of Philosophy, *Emeritus*
Harvard University

where my rendering was uncertain or where I thought they would be helpful for the better understanding of the Chinese Text. In my Introduction to this book, I have stated the problem suggested by the comparative study of the two texts, have summarised the available material on the same and have drawn my conclusions.

In the printed pages of this book, several mistakes have unfortunately crept in. The difficulty of securing in India the right Chinese types and the still greater difficulty of securing compositors properly qualified to handle them, has been responsible for the wrong use of some Chinese characters. The necessary corrections have, as far as possible, been indicated at the end in 'Corrections and Additions'.

This book is not intended to satisfy the need of those scholars who would like to have the Vimuttimagga in its entirety, but the author will consider himself to be amply rewarded if it serves the purpose of giving an incentive to some young scholars for presenting to the world the complete work, in the near future.

I have to thank Prof. Vidhushekhar Bhattacharya, Prof. Beni Madhab Barua and Dr. Bimala Churn Law for having gone through the Introduction of this book and for making several suggestions. I have also to thank Mr. J. C. Sarkhel, Manager, Calcutta Oriental Press, for having taken great pains in the printing of this book.

And lastly, I have to acknowledge my indebtedness to the University of Bombay for the substantial financial help it has granted towards the cost of the publication of this book.

November, 1937.

P. V. BAPAT

CONTENTS

| | | | | Pages |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------|----------|--------|--------|
| | | | Facing | |
| FRONTISPIECE | ... | ... | ... | iii |
| DEDICATION | ... | ... | ... | iii |
| PREFACE | ... | ... | ... | v |
| CONTENTS | ... | ... | ... | vii |
| ABBREVIATIONS | ... | ... | ... | ix |
| SUMMARY OF INTRODUCTION | ... | ... | ... | xiii |
| INTRODUCTION | ... | ... | ... | xv-lix |
| TEXT | ... | ... | ... | 1-128 |
| Chapter | I Nidānam | ... | ... | 1 |
| Chapter | II Sīla-paricchedo | ... | ... | 4 |
| •Chapter | III Dhutāni | ... | ... | 16 |
| Chapter | IV Samādhi-paricchedo | ... | ... | 26 |
| Chapter | V Kalyāṇa-mitta-pariyesanā | ... | ... | 32 |
| Chapter | VI Cariyā-paricchedo | ... | ... | 34 |
| Chapter | VII Kammaṭṭhāna-paricchedo | ... | ... | 38 |
| Chapter | VIII Kamma-dvāra(?) | ... | ... | 43 |
| ,, | ,, | Part One | ... | 43 |
| ,, | ,, | Two | ... | 51 |
| ,, | ,, | Three | ... | 59 |
| ,, | ,, | Four | ... | 69 |
| ,, | ,, | Five | ... | 78 |
| Chapter | IX Pañca Abhiññā | ... | ... | 86 |
| Chapter | X Paññā-paricchedo | ... | ... | 92 |
| Chapter | XI Pañca Upāyā | ... | ... | 95 |
| | | Part One | ... | 95 |
| | | Part Two | ... | 108 |
| Chapter | XII Sacca-paricchedo | ... | ... | 113 |
| | | Part One | ... | 113 |
| | | Part Two | ... | 118 |

| | | | | | |
|--|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| APPENDIX A | ... | ... | ... | ... | 129 |
| 1. Development of a child in the womb from week to week. | | | | | |
| 2. List of the names (in Chinese transliteration) of worms in a human body. | | ... | ... | ... | 130 |
| 3. Parallel passages in the Vimuttimagga and Peṭakopadesa | ... | ... | ... | ... | 133 |
| APPENDIX B | ... | ... | ... | ... | 136 |
| A comparative table showing the pages of the P.T.S. edition of the Visuddhimagga with the corresponding chapters and paragraphs of the same book in the H.O. Series. | | | | | |
| INDEX OF PALI WORDS | ... | ... | ... | ... | 141 |
| GENERAL INDEX IN ENGLISH | ... | ... | ... | ... | 163 |
| CORRECTIONS AND ADDITIONS | ... | ... | ... | ... | 167 |

ABBREVIATIONS

[Note—References are to the pages of the volumes except in the cases mentioned specifically otherwise.]

| | |
|-------------|---|
| A. | Anguttaranikāya, P.T.S. edition. |
| Abhk. | Abhidharmakośa, translated into French by Louis de la Valeé Poussin. [Reference is to the chapter and page of the vol. in which the chapter is included]. |
| Abhm. | Abhidhammāvatāra in Buddhadatta's Manuals (P.T.S.). |
| AbhmV. | Abhidhammattha-Vibhāvinī, ed. by Rev. Sumangala, Colombo (1898). |
| Abhs. | Abhidhammatthasangaha, P.T.S. edition. |
| A.M.B. | Aspects of Mahāyāna Buddhism and its relation to Hīnayāna by N. Dutt (1930). |
| . | |
| B. | Buddhaghosa. |
| Bagchi | Le Canon Bouddhique en Chine. |
| B.D. | The Bodhisattva Doctrine in Buddhist Sanskrit Literature by Har Dayal. |
| Chin. Dhs. | Der Chinesische Dharmasangraha von Weller (1923). |
| Cm. | Commentary; added after the abbreviation of a work means commentary on that work. |
| Cp. | Cariyāpiṭaka, P.T.S. edition. |
| Corr. | Corresponds to |
| D. | Dīghanikāya, P.T.S. edition. |
| Dh. or Dhp. | Dhammapada [ref. to the verse]. |
| DhsA. | Dhammasaṅgaṇi-Āṭṭhakathā i.e. Āṭṭhasālinī. |
| DhsCm. | Dhammasaṅgaṇi-Commentary i.e. Āṭṭhasālinī. |
| diff. | Different, differs. |
| Dipa. | Dīpavāṃsa, edited by Oldenberg. |
| E. R. E. | Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics. |
| expl. | Explanation. |
| g.a. | Generally agrees. |
| id. | Identical. |
| Kimura | The Original and Developed Doctrines of Indian Buddhism (in charts). |

| | |
|---------------------|--|
| M. | Majjhimanikāya, P.T.S. edition. |
| Madhy. | Maddhyamaka-kārikā with Vṛtti (Bib. Buddhica vol. IV). |
| Mal. | Malalasekara, The Pāli Literature of Ceylon. |
| Mv. | Mahāvamsa, Geiger's edition. |
| Mvy. | Mahāvyupatti, Japanese edition in Sanskrit, Tibetan and Chinese by Sakaki. |
| n | Added after a figure means notes on that page. |
| N.C. or n.c. | Nothing corresponding. |
| p.a. | Partly agrees. |
| Pet. | Photographic copy of the Mass. of Peṭakopadesa by Hardy, preserved in the State Library in Berlin. Burmese edition printed in the Zabu Meit Swe Press, Rangoon (1917). |
| Przyluski | La légend de l'empereur Aśoka. |
| Ps. | Patisambhidā, P.T.S. edition. |
| Ptk. | Specimen des Peṭakopadesa von Rudolph Fuchs, Berlin, 1908. |
| Ptn. | Paṭṭhāna, P.T.S. edition. |
| q.d. | quite different. |
| r.a. | roughly agrees. |
| r.c. | roughly corresponds. |
| S. | Samyuttanikāya. |
| S.A. or s.a. | substantially agrees. |
| S.D. or s.d. | slightly different. |
| Sik. | Sikṣasamuccaya (Bib. Buddhica). |
| S.N., SN, or | |
| Sn. | Suttanipāta, reference to the number of stanzas. |
| Sph. | Sphuṭārthābhidharmakośavyākhyā [Bib. Buddhica, vol. XXI]. |
| Sv. | Sāsanavamīsa (P.T.S. ed.). |
| Tak. | Taisho edition of the Vimuttimagga in the Chinese Tripitaka (vol. 32. pp. 399-461) edited by Takakusu and Watanabe. |
| Upa. | Upatissa. |
| Vbh. | Vibhanga, P.T.S. edition. |
| Vim. | Vimuttimagga, popular Chinese edition printed at Bi-ling in the province of Kiang-Su (1918). The references are to the number of the book, page (the reverse side of the page being indicated by the addition of the letter 'a' to the number) and column. |

| | |
|------------|--|
| Vis. | Visuddhimagga, edited by Henry Clark Warren and Prof. D. Kosambi, the references being to the number of chapters and paragraphs. [To be published in the Harvard Oriental Series]. |
| Winternitz | Geschichte der Indischen Litteratur, Zweiter Band. |

Note:—The references to the Commentary of the Visuddhi-magga are to the edition of the same published in P. G. Mūḍyne Piṭaka Press, 1909, unless otherwise mentioned. The references to the synopsis of the Vimuttimagga are indicated merely by the number of pages without putting any word before 'p.' That is to say references like 'p. 5, p. 27,' indicate that the reference is to the synopsis of the Vimuttimagga, which forms the main part of this dissertation. Any remarks or comments by the writer are put in square brackets. The Roman figures in the marginal notes of the synopsis refer to the chapters of the Visuddhimagga and the following Arabic figures show the number of the paragraph. I have not adopted any European or American transliteration-system of the Chinese sounds, but I have generally followed Nanjio in indicating the Chinese sound by its closest equivalent in the Indian sound-system, except in the case of some names which are more easily recognised in their transliterations used by previous writers. I find this more convenient, especially when the Chinese sound represents an originally Indian sound. The letters a, b, c used after the number of pages of the Taisho edition by Takakusu and Watanabe indicate respectively the upper middle and lower sections of the page. The figures after these letters indicate the number of columns beginning from the right.

SUMMARY OF THE INTRODUCTION

1. Vimuttimagga in its Chinese translation Cie-t'o-tāo-lun.
2. Translated into Chinese by Seng-chie-po-lo.
3. Similarity between the Vimuttimagga and the Visuddhimagga and four possible theories to explain the similarity.
4. Prof. Nagai's view.
5. Dr. Malalasekar's comment on the above and his suggestion about the solution of the problem.
6. This question can be decided only on the merits of the evidence, internal and external.
7. General account of the Vimuttimagga.
8. Correspondences between the chapters of the Vimuttimagga and the Visuddhimagga.
9. Similarity between the two books due to the common sources or common material upon which both the authors draw, such as
 - (i) Pāli Texts, (ii) Porāṇas, (iii) Pubbācariyās, (iv) Aṭṭhakathās, (v) Peṭaka. (vi) A verse ascribed to Sāriputta by both the authors, and (vii) Some unidentified sources.
10. Similes, metaphors and illustrations.
 - (i) Common to both the Texts.
 - (ii) Peculiar to Upatissa.
10. Dis-similarity between the two texts.
 - (A) Dis-similarity in doctrinal points.
 - (i) Kammaṭṭhānas, (ii) Kasiṇa-maṇḍala, (iii) Extension of the Brahmavihāra-nimitta, (iv) Cariyās, (v) Rūpās, (vi) Jhānangas, (vii) Indriyas, (viii) Anulomaññāṇa, (ix) Nevasaññā-nāsaññāyatana-samādhi, (x) Asaññī-samādhi.
 - (B) Dis-similarity in treatment.
 - (i) Interpretation of words and expressions.
 - (ii) Different treatment in whole sections.
 - (iii) One goes into more details where the other does not go.
 - (iv) Upatissa introduces altogether new matter, which is not found in Buddhaghosa.

12. Reference to other views on doctrinal points:
 - (A) Those that have been mentioned by both the authors.
 - (B) Those that have been referred to by one author and found to be exactly tallying with the views of the other. Light thrown on such passages by Dhammapāla's comment.
13. References to proper names.
 - (i) Texts, (ii) Places, (iii) Personages.
14. Transliterations of Indian words.
15. References to a Cāndāla.
16. Style of the Vimuttimagga as we have it in its Chinese version and the method of the translation.
17. Review of all the internal evidence and the external evidence of Dhammapāla.
18. Dhammapāla.

The author of Paramattha-mañjūsā, the Commentary on the Visuddhimagga, and the author of the Commentaries on the Thera-Therī-Āgathā, Petavatthu, Vimānavatthu, Netti-pakarāṇa, etc. is the same. Belonged to the same tradition and school as that of Buddhaghosa and did not live long after him—perhaps within two centuries—and therefore there is no reason to doubt his testimony.
19. Abhayagiri School—Its history.
Indian monks went to Abhayagirivihāra.
20. Who was Upatissa? Where and when did he compose the book? In what language did he write his book? What do we know about him from the Vimuttimagga? Discovery of a Tibetan version of a chapter of the Vimuttimagga. Indian origin of the Vimuttimagga.
21. First of the four theories can be accepted.
22. Kalyāna-mittas.

INTRODUCTION

It is nearly eighteen years since Prof. M. Nagai of the Imperial University, Tokyo, Japan, pointedly brought to the notice of Buddhist scholars the existence, in the Chinese Buddhist literature, of a book called *Ciē-t'o-tāo-lun*, *解脱道論*, or *Vimuttimagga* as he rendered it in Pāli.¹ This book is the same as is numbered 1293 in Bunyiu Nanjio's catalogue of the Chinese Translation of the Buddhist *Tripiṭaka*,² although Nanjio gives 'Vimoksha-mārga-śāstra' as the Sanskrit rendering of the Chinese title. Nanjio further tells us that this book was composed by the Arhat Upatishya or Śāriputra³ and was translated into Chinese by Seng-chie-po-lo 僧伽波羅 in 505 A.D.⁴ in the Liān dynasty (A.D. 502-557). This book is divided into twelve chapters in twelve fasciculi or Chinese books.

Nanjio gives us no information about *Upatiṣya*, or *Upatissa* as we may say in Pāli; but he gives us some information about Seng-chie-po-lo.⁵ The name Seng-chie-po-lo, or, San-chie-pho-lo as Nanjio transliterates it, is explained in the Biography of the

1. J.P.T.S. 1917-19, pp. 69-80. Notice of the same has been taken by subsequent writers. See Preface (p. vi) to the translation of the *Visuddhimagga* by Pe Maung Tin (1922); B. C. Law, *The Life and Work of Buddhaghosa* (1923), pp. 70-71, foot-note; also Foreword to the same book by Mrs. C. F. Rhys Davids; Malalasekara, *Pali Literature Ceylon* (1928); Vasudeo V. Gokhale, *Pratitya-samutpāda-śāstra des Ullangha*, (Bonn, 1930), p. 10, foot-note 2; A. P. Buddhadatta, *Introduction to the Saddhammapajjotikā* (1930-31), pp. vii-viii; Nyanatiloka, *Introduction to his German Translation* (p. 6) of the *Visuddhimagga* (1931); Mrs. C. F. Rhys Davids, *A Manual of Buddhism for Advanced Students* (1932), p. 31.

2. Also in *Katalog des Pekinger Tripiṭaka von Prof. Alfred Forke*, Berlin, 1916, p. 11, No. 63; *Hobogirin*, *Fascicule annexe*, No. 1648.

3. Nanjio perhaps so conjectures as the name 'Upatiṣya' was also used in connection with Śāriputra. See M. i. 150.

4. Bagchi (p. 418) gives 519 A.D.

5. This information is given in the *Continued Biography of Worthy Monks* 高僧傳; also compare Bagchi, pp. 415-418. Przyluski, gives in his *introduction* pp. xi-xii to 'La légend de l'empereur Aśoka' some information about him.

Buddhist worthy monks as Chun-yān 衆養 community-nourishment (Sangha-bhara) or Seng-khai 僧鎧 (Sangha-varman) community-armour. These translations help us to restore the name Seng-chie-po-lo to Sangha-bhara or Sangha-varman, but the Chinese po-lo may also be rendered as pāla and so it is not unlikely that the name was Sangha-pāla as Prof. Nagai restores it.¹ Sangha-pāla was a śramaṇa from Fu-nān or Bu-nān (扶南) Siam or Cambodia. He went to China and there translated some ten or eleven works. While he was in China, he became the disciple² of an Indian monk named Guṇabhadra (Kiu-nā-phu-tho),³ who himself came to China in 435 A.D. and was working on translations till 443 A.D. We further learn from Bunyiu Nanjio's catalogue that this Guṇabhadra was a noted scholar of the Mahāyāna school. We are also told there (pp. 415-416) that "he was a śramaṇa of Central India, a Brahman by caste and nicknamed the Mahāyāna on account of being well acquainted with the doctrine of Mahāyāna." On his way to China Guṇabhadra visited Sihala-dipa (Ceylon).⁴ If we look at the list of books translated by him, we find along with several Mahāyāna works, two books of the Hinayāna school, Saṃyuktāgama Sūtra and Abhidharma-prakaraṇapāda. This shows that Guṇabhadra was also interested in Hinayāna. He worked on translations till 443 A.D. and died in 468 A.D. in his seventy-fifth year. We learn from Nanjio that San-chie-pho-lo or Sangha-pāla worked on his translations from 505-520 A.D. and died in the year 520 while he was in his sixty-fifth year.⁵ The Biography of the Buddhist Worthy Monks referred to above tells us that Sangha-pāla was a very brilliant and highly precocious boy. As soon as he came of age to begin his study, he left the worldly life and specialized himself in the study of the Abhidhamma. Having heard the name of the country of China as famous for the study of the Dhamma, he took a boat and went to that

1. S. Lévi (J.As. 1915, p. 26) does not think this to be correct.

2. Bagchi, Przyluski, following P. Pelliot, consider this as impossible; also see B.E.F.E.O., III. p. 285. It is suggested that probably there is a confusion with another name Guṇavṛddhi.

3. 求那跋陀; Nanjio (pp. 415-16) adds one more character lo 邱

4. Taisho, 50. 344a, 18.

5. M. Pelliot [B.E.F.E.O., III, p. 285] says 'C'est une inadvertance'. He gives 524 A.D. Bagchi [p. 416], Przyluski [Introd. p. XII] follow Pelliot.

country. We have here no information as to who brought Upatissa's Vimuttimagga to China. But judging from the fact that Sanghapāla was quite young when he came to China and from the fact that Gunabhadra, on his way to China, visited Ceylon, it seems not unlikely that the work was brought to China by Gunabhadra when he went to that country in 435 A.D.

This book Vimuttimagga of Upatissa bears such a close similarity, as will be seen from the synopsis of the book, with Buddhaghosa's Visuddhimagga that we cannot explain it as merely a matter of accident. Now, Buddhaghosa, who came to Ceylon and composed the Visuddhimagga and at least the Commentaries on the Four Nikāyas, was a contemporary of King Mahānāma who was crowned in Ceylon in or about 413 A.D.¹

Vimutti-magga
similar to
Visuddhi-magga.

Ceylonese tradition assigns the arrival of Buddhaghosa in Ceylon to the year 965² after the death of the Buddha. According to the Ceylonese tradition³ the Buddha died in 543 B.C. That gives us 422 A.D. as the date of Buddhaghosa's arrival in Ceylon. Visuddhimagga was the first work of Buddhaghosa after his arrival in Ceylon. It was this book that proved his ability to undertake the larger work of re-translating the Sinhalese Aṭṭhakathās into the Māgadī language. So it seems very probable that by the time Gunabhadra came to Ceylon, Buddhaghosa's Visuddhimagga was also well-known.

Now here is a problem. Upatissa's Vimuttimagga, as we have it now in its Chinese translation, bears a very close resemblance to Buddhaghosa's Visuddhimagga. It cannot be a matter of mere coincidence. It will have to be accounted for in one or the other of the following ways:—

(1) That Buddhaghosa had Upatissa's Vimuttimagga before him, that he took the framework of Upatissa's Vimuttimagga and amplified it with his sholastic erudition.

Four possible theories.

1. Mal. pp. 76, 81, 96; Max Müller, S.B.E., Vol. X, p. 15 gives 410-432 A.D. as the period of Mahānāma's reign; Rhys Davids gives 413 A.D., Vol. II, p. 886 of E.R.E.; Winternitz (Geschichte der Indischen Litteratur, Vol. II, p. 152) gives 413 A.D.; Geiger gives 458-480 A.D. as the date of the reign of King Mahānāma, p. xxxix, Intr. to Mahāvāma-Translatio.

2. Mal. p. 81.

3. Mal. p. 15.

(2) That Upatissa had Buddhaghosa's book before him and that he abridged it by cutting down several chapters and at the same time introduced several modifications in consistency with the doctrines and views of the school to which he belonged.

(3) That both these books go to some old common source like the *Atthakathās* upon which both of them draw, each treating and interpreting the same old material in consistency with the doctrines and views of the school of each.

Still another possibility is suggested.

(4) That the main part of Upatissa's *Vimuttimagga* might have been composed before Buddhaghosa's *Visuddhimagga*, and that some portions might have been added to this book by Sanghapāla who translated the book into Chinese under the influence of the *Mahāyāna* school.¹

Let us see if we can find any justification for any of these theories or whether we can arrive at any decisive conclusion at all.

Prof. M. Nagai seems to hold the view given as 4 above.² He identifies Upatissa, the author of the *Vimuttimagga*, with one Upatissa who is mentioned in the list of the great Theras who handed down the *Vinayapiṭaka* from the time when Mahinda came to Ceylon.³ He points out that Pāli *Samantapāsādikā*, as well as its Chinese translation by Sanghabhadra in 488 A.D., gives an anecdote of Upatissa and his two disciples, *Mahāsumma* and *Mahāpaduma*, showing that Upatissa as a teacher of the *Vinaya* was held in high esteem. He gives another anecdote which tells us how *Mahāpaduma* cured the queen, wife of King Vasabha, of an illness. This King Vasabha was crowned, according to Wijesinha, in 66 A.D.⁴ So, Prof. Nagai concludes that this Upatissa, who is mentioned in the list of the Theras that handed down the *Vinaya*, who was held in great respect by the Sangha and who was a contemporary of King Vasabha [who was crowned in 66 A.D.], is the author of the *Vimuttimagga*, and that Buddhaghosa had probably this book before him when he wrote the *Visuddhimagga*.

Prof.
Nagai's
views.

1. J.P.T.S. 1917-19, p. 79.

2. J.P.T.S. 1917-19, pp. 71, 78, 79.

3. *Ses. Vin. v. 3.*

4. J.P.T.S. 1917-19, pp. 73, 74; Mal. (p. 49) gives the period of Vasabha's reign as 65-109 A.D. approximately.

Here, however, we do not find any other proof adduced by Prof. Nagai to identify him with the author of the Vimuttimagga. His main reliance is on the fact that there happens to be one Upatissa mentioned in the list of the Theras who handed down the Vinaya and about whom the Samantapāsādikā in its Pāli as well as Chinese version gives some anecdotes.

Dr. Malalasekara, having considered this opinion of Prof. Nagai, suggests¹ that there is no reason to conclude that the Visuddhimagga is a revised version of the Vimuttimagga, as Prof. Nagai suggests. "If we suppose," says he, "that the Vimuttimagga was the result of books brought by Guṇabhadra of Mid-India, from his travels in Ceylon and other Hinayāna countries, the solution of the problem seems clear. Both authors drew their inspiration from the same source." He suggests that although Buddhaghosa came to Ceylon to study the Sinhalese Āṭṭhakathās which were genuine, there might still have been *some* Commentaries in India, which were studied in that country with traditional interpretation handed down through centuries. "If then it is assumed," concludes Dr. Malalasekara, "that the Vimuttimagga found its way into China by way of some of the schools which flourished in India at that time, and which studied the Canon in the more or less traditional method, it would not be difficult to conclude that the Visuddhimagga and the Vimuttimagga are more or less independent works written by men belonging to much the same school of thought—the Theravāda." This view coincides with the third of the probable theories that we suggested above.

These conflicting views on the subject of the inter-relation between Upatissa's Vimuttimagga and Buddhaghosa's Visuddhimagga prompted me to make a comparative study of both these texts and I intend in the following pages to submit the results of my study on this subject.

We shall have to decide this question of the inter-relation between these two texts after thoroughly investigating the evidence, internal and external, that is available to us.

Let us first see what internal evidence we can get from the comparative study of both these books which form the main part of this dissertation. We shall, of course, go into more details of the Vimuttimagga than those of the Visuddhimagga, as the former is much less known than the latter.

Dr. Malala
sekara's
view.

1. ^cMal. pp. 86, 87.

General account of the Vim.

The Vimuttimagga is divided into twelve chapters in twelve fasciculi or Chinese books. The division of the books seems to be based on no other principle but the convenience of the size of each book, while the division of the chapters is more systematic, being based on the proper division of the subject matter.

The first chapter is merely introductory in which Upatissa, the author of the Vimuttimagga, takes up the following stanza :

*Silam samādhi paññā ca vimutti ca anuttara
anubuddhā ime dhammā Gotamena yasassina.*¹

[A. ii. 2; D. ii. 123].

as the basis for his whole work. In the introductory chapter, he comments on this stanza and says why he must show the Way to Deliverance (*vimutti*). In the second chapter, Upatissa gives the classification of *Sila*, conduct. In the third chapter, he discusses the various kinds of practices of purification (dhutas). In the fourth, he gives the classification of concentration (*saññādhi*). In the fifth chapter called 'Search for the Best Friend' (*Kalyāna-mittta-pariyesana*), Upatissa discusses the qualities of the best friend and tells us the ways and means to find out such a friend. The sixth chapter is devoted to the discussion of the different types of character or disposition (*cariyā*). The seventh chapter enumerates the various devices or helpful means (*kammaṭṭhānāni*) to attain the concentration and further shows how they can be thoroughly understood. The eighth chapter is the longest chapter and is divided into five parts. This whole chapter shows in a detailed manner how all those devices (or *kammaṭṭhānāni*) could be used to induce concentration. The ninth chapter treats of the five miraculous powers which one attains as a consequence of mastery over the various practices of concentration. The tenth chapter gives the classification of insight (*paññā*). The eleventh chapter, divided into two parts, gives a detailed treatment of the five means (*upāyā*), insight into which helps one to be free from darkness of ignorance and helps one to cut off craving and to attain noble wisdom (*ariyā paññā*). The twelfth chapter, also divided into two parts, treats of penetration into the Truths by means of Purities (*visuddhiyo*) and Insights (*ñāṇa*), by accomplishing which one reaches the Fruit of holy life culminating in Arhatship.

1. P. 1; Conduct, Concentration, Insight and unsurpassable Deliverance—these dhammas the Illustrious Gotama understood in succession.

Thus it will be seen that all these chapters contain an exposition of the topics mentioned in the introductory stanza, namely, conduct (*sīla*), concentration (*samādhi*), insight (*paññā*) and deliverance (*vimutti*). The following table shows the correspondence of the chapters of the Vimutti-magga with those of the Visuddhi-magga:—

| Vimuttimagga | Visuddhimagga | Comparison of the chapters of Vim. & Vis. |
|-----------------------------------|---|---|
| I Introductory | Nothing Corresponding | |
| II <i>Sīla-pariccheda</i> | I <i>Sīlaniddesa</i> | |
| III <i>Dhutāni</i> | II <i>Dhutanga-niddesa</i> | |
| IV <i>Samādhi-pariocheda</i> | | |
| V <i>Kalyāṇamitta-pariyesanā</i> | | |
| VI <i>Cariyā-pariccheda</i> | | |
| VII <i>Kammaṭṭhāna-pariccheda</i> | | |
| | III <i>Kammaṭṭhāna-gahaṇa-niddesa</i> | |
| VIII <i>Kamma-dvāra</i> | | |
| | [or <i>kamma-mukha</i> (?)] | |
| “ Part one | IV <i>Paṭhavi-kasiṇa-niddesa</i> , paragraphs 21-138. | |
| Part two | IV <i>Pathavi-kasiṇa-niddesa</i> , IV. 139—to the end of the chapter. | |
| | V <i>Sesa-kasiṇaniddesa</i> , paragraphs 1-23. | |
| | X <i>Āruppaniddesa</i> | |
| Part three | V <i>Sesa-kasiṇa-niddesa</i> , paragraphs 24-26. | |
| | VI <i>Asubha-niddesa</i> | |
| | VII <i>Cha-anussati-niddesa</i> | |
| Part four | VIII <i>Anussati-kammaṭṭhāna-niddesa</i> | |
| Part five | IX <i>Brahmavihāra-niddesa</i> | |
| | XI <i>Samādhi-niddesa</i> | |
| IX <i>Pañca abhiññā</i> | XII <i>Iddhividha-niddesa</i> | |
| | XIII <i>Abhiññā-niddesa</i> | |

| Vimuttimagga | Visuddhimagga |
|-----------------------------|---|
| X <i>Paññā-pariocheda</i> | XIV <i>Khandha-niddesa</i> paragraphs 1-27. |
| XI <i>Pañca upāyā</i> | XIV <i>Khandha-niddesa</i> , paragraphs 27-the end. |
| Part one | XV <i>Āyatana-niddesa</i> |
| Part two | XVII <i>Paṭiccasamuppāda-niddesa</i> XVI <i>Indriya-sacca-niddesa</i> , paragraph 13—to the end (the part on <i>sacca</i> only). |
| XII <i>Sacca-pariccheda</i> | XVIII <i>Diṭṭhivisuddhi-niddesa</i> XIX <i>Kankhāvitarāṇa-visuddhi-</i> <i>niddesa</i> |
| Part one | XX <i>Maggāmaggañāṇa-dassana-</i> <i>visuddhiniddesa</i> (in part). |
| Part two | XXI <i>Paṭipadā-ñāṇadassana-visud-</i> <i>dhi-niddesa</i> , paragraphs 1-28. |
| | XXI <i>Paṭipadā-ñāṇadassana-visud-</i> <i>dhi-niddesa</i> , paragraph 29-to the end. |
| | XXII <i>Ñāṇadassana-visuddhi-nid-</i> <i>desa</i> . |
| | XXIII <i>Paññābhāvanānisamsa-nid-</i> <i>desa</i> . |

This is only a rough correspondence between the different chapters of the two books, some chapters, especially the last three or four, of the Visuddhimagga being inextricably mixed up in the two parts of the twelfth chapter of the Vimuttimagga.

This brief resumé of the contents of the two books at once reveals the fact that there is more than superficial agreement between these two books. Let us go into more details.

It is a well-known fact that in the Visuddhimagga, Buddhaghosa very often refers to, or quotes from, older authorities which he specifically names, such as the Vibhanga, the Paṭisambhidā, the Niddesa, the Peṭaka, the Aṭṭhakathās on the Nikāyas, or alludes to by some general name like Pāli, Porāṇas, Pubbācariyas, or Aṭṭhakathās. Sometimes, he merely says, 'So it has been said (*vuttam h'etam*)', without giving any indication as to

what source he refers to. Now it is remarkable to note that there are many correspondences between the several passages in the two books that are due to these common sources of the texts from Pāli, or from the *Porāṇas*, *Pubbācariyas* or from the *Attakathās*. We find several passages which are found in both the texts in identical, or almost identical words and attention is drawn to these, from time to time, in the main part of this dissertation. We shall indicate here only a few outstanding cases.

(i) Passages from the Pāli Texts.

Among the Pāli texts, the first four *Nikāyas*, the *Vibhanga* and *Paṭisambhidāmagga* are the texts on which both Upatissa and Buddhaghosa mostly draw. The passages, for instance, taken as texts by Upatissa for the exposition of the trances or anussatis (except that of *Upasama*), or iddhis, or *nirodha-samāpatti* are the same as those given by Buddhaghosa; for they all avowedly go to one and the same common source. The explanation of *ācāra-gocara* in the second chapter of the *Vimuttimagga* (p. 11) is the same as that in Buddhaghosa; for, both of them draw upon the *Vibhanga*. The explanation of iddhis (p. 86) goes back to the common source of the *Paṭisambhidā*. The explanation of some of the questions regarding *Nirodha-samāpatti* (p. 128) is based on the *Cūlavedalla-sutta* (no. 44 of the *Majjhimanikāya*). The passage taken for the exposition of *ānāpānasati* and its advantages (p. 69) are taken by both the authors from S.v. 322, and M. iii. 82 respectively.

Passages
from the
Pāli.

In addition to these, there are scores of passages, too numerous to be mentioned here, taken from the Pāli texts quoted by both the authors, as authorities or illustrations of a point under discussion. In some cases Buddhaghosa merely alludes to a passage by giving the introductory words or by giving the name of a *sutta*, while Upatissa gives the same passage in full. For instance, while explaining the disadvantages or dangers of worldly pleasures (*kāmesu ādinavā*) Buddhaghosa merely refers to the passage in the *Majjhimanikāya*, *sutta* 22, beginning with *appassādā kāmā*, while Upatissa gives, in full, the passage (p. 44) including the similes of a skeleton of bones, a piece of flesh, a torch of grass or reed, a dream, a fruit, or a thing begged and so on. In another place, Buddhaghosa merely refers, for the explanation of *vijjā* and *carāna*, to the *Ambaṭṭha*¹ and the

1. D. i, *sutta* no. 3.

Bhayabherava¹ suttas, while Upatissa gives the full explanation as given in these suttas.²

Porāṇas.

(ii) **Porāṇas.**

There are several passages quoted by Buddhaghosa from Porāṇas and some of these passages are found in Upatissa's Vimuttimagga in almost similar words. For instance, a number of the verses at the end of chapter XVIII of the Visuddhimagga, about the inter-dependence of 'name' and 'form' are found in the Vimuttimagga³ in almost similar words, the variations being noted in the detailed synopsis of the Vimuttimagga. Likewise, the similes of a lamp (*padipa*), the sun (*suriya*) and a boat (*nāvā*) given in the Visuddhimagga XXII. 92, 95, 96 are found in the Vimuttimagga in identical words.⁴

**Pubbā-
cariyas**

(iii) **Pubbācariyas.**

The passage explaining the arising of the different consciousnesses of the eye, ear, nose, etc. ascribed by Buddhaghosa in XV. 39 to Pubbācariyas (Former Teachers), is found in the Vimuttimagga⁵ in a slightly varied but fuller form.

Upatissa refers several passages to former teachers and some of these are found with slight variations in Buddhaghosa's Visuddhimagga although Buddhaghosa does not make mention of any former teachers in that connection. For instance, Upatissa says⁶ (7.3a.3) that former teachers have mentioned four ways of cultivating *ānāpānasati*, which he gives as *gananā*, *anubandhanā*, *thapanā*, and *sallakkhanā*, while Buddhaghosa in VIII. 189, gives these four ways, and in addition four more without saying anything about former teachers. While treating of the *Catudhātuvavatthāna*, Upatissa says (8.15.1) that former teachers have given ten⁷ ways in which this *vavatthāna* can be done, whereas Buddhaghosa speaks in XI. 86 of thirteen ways without speaking of any former teachers. In his treatment of divine ear (*dibbasota*), Upatissa speaks of the way, according to some teachers, of developing the power of divine hearing and says that the *yogāvacara* begins first with giving his attention to the sounds of worms residing within his body.⁸ Buddhaghosa speaks in XIII. 3, without any mention of former teachers, of the sounds of these worms residing within one's body.

1. M. i. sutta no. 4.

3. pp. 113, 116.

5. p. 101. 6. p. 70.

2. ¹ p. 63.

4. p. 119.

8. p. 88.

7. p. 82.

(iv) *Att̄hakathās.*Att̄ha-
kathās.

There are some passages quoted from the *Att̄hakathās* by Buddhaghosa. For instance, in the chapter on the *Asubhanimitta*, he quotes a very long passage (VI. 19-22), showing in a detailed manner how the *yogāvacara* should go to a place where he can find the *asubhanimitta*. This whole passage is found in the *Vimuttimagga*¹ (6.3a.2-6.5a.3) with a slight variation consisting of the omission of the repeated phrases. Similarly, while speaking of the first four *kasinas*, the *kasinas* of the Earth, Water, Fire and Wind, both the authors seem to be referring to the same *Att̄hakathās*; for we find correspondence in their treatment even to the details. In the quotation given by Buddhaghosa IV. 22, we have a reference to the size of the *nimitta*, *suppamat-tam vā sarāvamattam vā*, as big as 'a winnowing-basket or a water-bowl.' Exactly the same idea, expressed in identical words, is found in the *Vimuttimagga*.² Similarly, in the treatment of the *kasina* of Wind, Buddhaghosa gives a quotation from the *Att̄hakathās*, where we find a mention of the top of a sugar-cane, or of a bamboo (V.9). We find the same mention in the *Vimuttimagga*.³ The remarks by both the authors about the natural and artificial *kasina* in the case of the first four *kasinas* agree and we may explain this as due to the same common source of the *Att̄hakathās*.

(v) In the *Visuddhimagga* IV.86, Buddhaghosa gives a passage from the *Peṭaka* showing how the five factors of a trance are the opposites of the five hindrances (*nīvaraṇāni*). In the *Vimuttimagga* (4.17.1), we find exactly the same quotation ascribed by Upatissa to a book called *Sān Tsāng*⁴ 三藏.

(vi) In the *Visuddhimagga* XIV.48, Buddhaghosa gives the following verse ascribed to Sāriputta, where we are told of the size of the sensitive part (*pasāda*) of the eye:

*Yena cakkhappasādena rūpāni manupassati
parittam sukhumam etam ūkāsirasamūpamam.*

Now in the *Vimuttimagga*⁵ (10.2.1), we have the same verse in almost identical words. Instead of *ūkāsira*, Upatissa, as far as can be seen from this Chinese translation, uses the word *ūkā* only.

1. *p. 60.

2. p. 44

3. p. 58.

4. p. 49; the same passage is quoted in DhsCm. p. 165 and Dhammapāla in his commentary on the *Visuddhimagga* refers to *Peṭaka* at least three times (pp. 153, 194, 874) almost in a similar context.

5. p. 96.

A quota-
tion from
the *Peṭaka*A common
verse

Some
uniden-
tified source.

(vii) Over and above these cases, where the common source of the parallel passages can be definitely ascertained, there are others where the similarity is distinctly seen, although the common source may not be known.¹ For instance, in the chapter on the 'Search for the Best Friend' (*Kalyāṇa-mitta-pariyesanā*), Upatissa mentions² the seven qualities of the best friend which are identical with those given by Buddhaghosa in the verse III.61. Likewise, the comment on the word *sikkhati*, as given by Upatissa,³ is word for word the same as is found in the Visuddhimagga VIII.173. So also, the comment on the word *anubandhanā* in the Visuddhimagga VIII.196 is the same as Upatissa's comment on the same word.⁴ Upatissa also gives a passage⁵ which corresponds to Buddhaghosa's four *nayas*, *ekattanaya*, *nānattanaya*, *abyāpāranaya*, *evaṇḍhammatānaya* given by Buddhaghosa in XVII.309-313 and XX.102.

Similes,
metaphors,
illustra-
tions.

We also find several similes and metaphors which are common to both of our texts, either because they are taken from a common source or because one has borrowed from the other. The parable of a mountain-cow (*gāvī pabbateyyā*) in the Visuddhimagga IV.130, taken from an older source (A.iv.418-19), is given by Upatissa.⁶ The simile of a young calf (*dhenupaka vaccha*) given by Buddhaghosa in IV.174 is also given by Upatissa.⁷ The simile of a saw (*kakaca*) used for cutting wood, given by Buddhaghosa in VIII.201-203 to illustrate how attention is to be directed to the wind of breath as it comes in and goes out, is found in the Vimuttimagga.⁸ The simile of the same as given in the Kakacūpama sutta (No. 21 of Majjhimanikāya) is given by Upatissa in another place⁹ to illustrate how one should see the disadvantages in ill-will. This corresponds to Buddhaghosa's mention of the same in IX.15. The similes of a drum and sound¹⁰ (B.XVIII.6.), a lame man and a blind man¹¹ (B.XVIII.35.), flash of lightning and a city of Gandharvas¹² (B.XX.104.) are found in the Vimuttimagga. The Mahābhūtas are compared by Upatissa to three sticks reclining upon one another.¹³ This corresponds to Buddhaghosa's simile in another context where he shows the inter-dependence of

| | |
|--|-------------|
| 1. Probably it may be some <i>ācariyamata</i> . | 4. p. 70. |
| 2. p. 32. | 3. p. 70. |
| 5. p. 115. | 6. p. 51. |
| 7. p. 52; also cf. Pet., Bur. ed. p. 131: <i>vaccho khīrapako va mātarām</i> . | 8. p. 70. |
| 8. p. 70. | 9. p. 78. |
| 11. p. 113. | 12. p. 116. |
| | 10. p. 113. |
| | 13. p. 96. |

nāma and *rūpa* thus: *yathā hi dvīsu naṭakalāpisu aññamaññam* *nissāya thapitāsu* in XVIII.32. Upatissa in 11.14.10 gives a simile 'like a man who takes water from some one place in the ocean, tastes it with his tongue and knows all the water in the ocean to be salty'.¹ This corresponds to Buddhaghosa's *eka-jala-bindumhi sakala-samudda-jalarasam viya*, 'as the taste of all water in the ocean is in one drop of water from it' (XVI. 60), used in a different context. Even the illustration of *devāñam devāyatana* *iva*, given by Buddhaghosa in X.24.31 while explaining the meaning of the word *āyatana*, is found in the Vimuttimagga.³ The similes of the continuous flame⁴ of a lamp, a moth⁵ falling into a lamp, or the flame of a lamp in a quiet place,⁶ which are very common in Buddhist literature, are given by both Buddhaghosa and Upatissa. So also Upatissa, like Buddhaghosa, gives the similes of the striking of a bell and the fluttering of wings by a bird to illustrate *vitakka*, and the similes of the merging sound and the wheeling round of a bird to illustrate *vicāra*.⁷

There are several other similes which are peculiar to Upatissa. He has given some protracted similes. For instance, there is a beautiful long-protracted simile of a king who is asleep,⁸ who hears the sound of a knock on the door, wakes up, instructs a servant to have the door opened, sees his gardener coming with a mango-fruit, eats the mango-fruit which the queen cuts and gives to him, gives his judgment about the fruit and goes back to sleep again. This simile is given to illustrate the whole process of thought when an object is seen through the sense-aperture of the eye.⁹ Another protracted simile given by Upatissa to illustrate the inter-relation of the different factors of Dependent Origination (*paticca-samuppāda*), and to show that the round of birth and death is without a beginning and without an end, is that of a seed and the rice-plant.¹⁰

Upatissa illustrates the distinction between *upacāra* and *appanā* by some beautiful similes. *Upacāra* is like a boat on water full of waves; *appanā* like a boat on water where there is no wind. *Upacāra* is like a young boy, *appanā* like a strong

1. p. not quoted. 2. p. 55. 3. p. 114. 4. p. 115.

5. Vis. XIV. 139, 'nivāte dipaccīnan thiti viya cetaso thiti'; cf. Aṭṭhasālinī, p. 119.

6. p. 146.

7. pp. 101-02; for a closely allied simile, see Aṭṭhasālinī pp. 279-80, § 573.

8. p. 102.

9. p. 104.

man. *Upacāra* is like a blind man, *appanā* like one who is not blind. *Upacāra* is like a man who recites suttas only after a long time and so forgets; *appanā* is like one who recites suttas constantly and so does not forget (4.7.8.-4.7a. 4). This simile of the recitation of the suttas seems to be a favourite one with Upatissa. He compares *vitakka* to a man who recites suttas in his mind, while *vicāra* is compared to one who meditates over the meaning of a *sutta*¹ (4.12a.10-4.13.1).

The distinction between *gotrabhū-ñāṇa* and *maggāñāṇa* is illustrated in this way. The former is like a man who has only one foot outside the threshold of a burning city, while the latter is like one who has put both his feet outside the city.² There is a most apt simile given by Upatissa to illustrate the cultivation of equanimity (*upekkhā*) after the cultivation of friendliness (*mettā*), compassion (*karuṇā*) and rejoicing or delight (*muditā*). Just as a man when he sees his relative coming back, after a long absence in a far-off country, pays attention to him for some time, but, later on, as time passes by, he becomes indifferent to him.³ There is another very appropriate simile to illustrate the behaviour of a *yogāvacara* with his master. 'Like a newly married bride going to wait upon her father-in-law and mother-in-law, the *yogāvacara* should have a sense of conscientiousness (*hiri*) and fear (*ottappa*), and should receive instructions from his master.'⁴ Upatissa shows the appropriateness of the order of the Four Noble Truths by illustrating them with the simile of a physician who first sees the symptoms of a disease, hears the cause of it and then seeing the possibility of a cure, prescribes a suitable medicine for the cure of the disease.⁵ The impurities of the body oozing out through its nine openings are compared to wine placed in a leaking pot⁶ (8.22a.1). The simile of an iron ball red-hot with fire, that could be moulded into whatever thing one likes, is given by Upatissa (9.6a.5). With this may be contrasted the similes of a goldsmith and of a potter preparing, respectively, whatever ornaments and pots they like from the red-hot gold and well-kneaded earth (B.XII.2). To illustrate the unknown destiny of an Arhat, Upatissa gives the simile of red-hot iron beaten and giving out sparks. When it is dipped into water we do not know where the sparks disappear;⁷ so we do not know anything

1. p 47. 2. p. 119. 3. p. 81. 4. p. 33. 5. p. 110.
6. p. 85; cf. p. 75. 7. p. 120; also cf. Sn. 1074, 1076.

about the destiny of an Arhat.¹ The simile of one who is afraid of a poisonous serpent is given by Upatissa in 5.17.7-8. One who wants to be free from upādānakhandhas is compared to a man who wants to get rid of a poisonous serpent whom he has grasped unawares.² The simile of an elephant and a goad is often given by Upatissa. For instance, he says, one must apply oneself to a *saṃādhi-nimitta* for controlling oneself, just as a goad is applied to an elephant for controlling him.³ To express harmfulness of a thing, Upatissa gives the similes of riding an elephant without a goad,⁴ or of a man who, having a natural excess of the humor of phlegm, eats fatty things⁵ or one who, having a natural excess of bile in his humors, takes hot drinks.⁶ Upatissa gives another very beautiful and most appropriate simile. The four Great Elements (*mahābhūtāni*) are compared to three sticks reclining upon one another and the Derived Elements' (*upādā rūpāni*) are compared to the shadows of the three sticks. Like the three sticks, the Great Elements, depend upon one another, but the Derived Elements, although they are derived from the Great Elements, do not depend upon one another, like the shadows of the sticks.⁷

There are also some similes which Upatissa gives from some older sources. For instance, to illustrate the first four trances⁸ of the realm of form, Upatissa gives the similes from M.i.276, 277-78. Buddhaghosa does not give these similes. Similarly the similes of a cart and an army (p. 48) are quite usual similes in Buddhist literature.⁹ Upatissa uses both of them in 4.16.8-10. "Just as, because of the different parts of the cart¹⁰ we can use the word cart, or because of the division of the army¹¹ we can say an army, so this trance (*jhāna*) is so called because of the different factors¹² (*angāni*)."¹³ Upatissa also gives very appropriate similes to illustrate the meaning of the different sankhāras. Touch (*phassa*) is like the light of the sun that strikes the wall, equanimity (*upekkhā*) like a man holding a scale of balance, false view (*ditthi*) like a blind man touching and feeling an elephant, shamelessness like a *caṇḍāla*.¹⁴ At another place, 'not to delight

1. p. 120.

2. p. 118; also see p. 115.

3. p. 115; also cf. p. 32, 41.

4. p. 41.

5. p. 41.

6. p. 41.

7. p. 96.

8. pp. 47, 79, 52-53.

9. Miln. pp. 26-28; Abhidharmakośa VIII. pp. 7-8.

10. Cf. B. XVIII. 28.

11. Cf. B. IV. p. 107.

12. p. 48.

13. p. 99.

in good things' is illustrated by the simile of a *candāla* who cares not for a princely throne.¹

Having noticed the points of similarity between our two texts, let us now proceed to examine the points of dis-similarity. The differences between the two texts are of two kinds: (A) in the doctrinal points and (B) in the method of treatment.

(A) At the outset it may be borne in mind that Upatissa does *not* at all differ from Buddhaghosa on any *fundamental* doctrines of Buddhism. This clearly shows that both of them accept the same Theravāda tradition. It is only on comparatively minor points that they differ.

(i) For instance, Upatissa gives thirty-eight *kammaṭṭhānas* as the principal ones and he mentions two others as only secondary.² His whole treatment of the *kammaṭṭhānas* is based on the acceptance of thirty-eight *kammaṭṭhānas*, mentioning occasionally the other two. In the detailed treatment of these *kammaṭṭhānas*, however, he has included these two also. This subject is discussed in a note in the main body of this dissertation³ and it will be seen from it that this classification of Upatissa is based upon an older classification as seen in M.ii.14-15, and Ps. i. 6. Netti and Abhidharmakośa of Vasubandhu (VIII.36a) also give the same *kasiṇas* as are given here.

(ii) Upatissa speaks of the *kasiṇa-maṇḍala* as a circular, triangular or quadrilateral,⁴ although he adds at the same time that former teachers considered a circular *maṇḍala* as the best. Buddhaghosa does not make any mention of the triangular or quadrilateral *kasiṇa*.

(iii) In connection with the *nimitta* of the Brahmavihāras, Upatissa speaks of the extension of the *nimitta* of the Brahma-vihāras as well as of the ten *kasiṇas*.⁵ Buddhaghosa is definitely opposed to this view. He speaks against this view and it is quite obvious that he has in mind some definite theorists who held this view. Can it not be that Buddhaghosa has this passage of Upatissa or this view of the school of Upatissa in mind?

(iv) Upatissa speaks of and accepts fourteen *cariyās*,⁶ or types of disposition, while Buddhaghosa, although he is aware

1. p. 15; also cf. Sik. 129-30, 150.

2. p. 38.

4. pp. 43-44.

6. p. 34.

3. pp. 38-39 note.

5. p. 39.

of this fourteen-fold classification, accepts only six cariyās. He definitely rejects the fourteen-fold classification (B. III. 74). He devotes a lot of space to the discussion of these cariyās and we shall have an occasion to refer to them again.¹

(v) Upatissa gives thirty kinds of rūpas,² four being the mahābhūtās, the great elements, and twenty-six upādārūpās, derived-matter. Buddhaghosa, gives only twenty-eight (XIV.36). He is aware of some other kinds of rūpas, which are added by some to his list. He discusses those rūpas and rejects all of them. In this connection, among other rūpas, he mentions *jātirūpa* and adds: 'according to some (*ekaccānam matena*, XIV.71), *middharūpa*'. Upatissa seems to accept these two rūpas. He has a very consistent view about this *middha-rūpa*, the material form or quality of sloth. He refers to *middha-rūpa* on three other occasions. In 4.15.4-4.15a.1 and in 10.3a.2-3, Upatissa says that *middha-rūpa* is of three kinds—that which is produced by weather (*utuja*), produced from mind (*cittaja*), and produced from food (*āhāraja*). Upatissa says that it is the *cittaja-middha* that is a hindrance (*nīvaraṇa*) and not the other two; for, they can be even in an Arhat. He gives a quotation³ from Anuruddha to explain that *cittaja middha* is to be given up at the time of Arhatship, while the other two can be given up later. In 12,13.10, Upatissa mentions only *thīna* (mental languor) and *uddhacca* (restlessness) as things that are given up at the time of entrance into the Path of Arhatship,⁴ while Buddhaghosa mentions *thīna-middha*⁵ and *uddhacca* in the same connection (XXII.71).

This view of Upatissa is supported by the author of the Milinda-pañha. In this book, we find the mention⁶ of ten kinds of physical states (*kāyānugatā dhammā*) over which an Arhat has no control. Among these ten, we find *middha*.

(vi) Buddhaghosa speaks of the five angas or factors of the first trance, three of the second, and two each of the third and fourth (IV.106,139,153,183). The factors of each trance are as follows:—

| | |
|----------------------|---|
| 1st trance, 5 angas: | <i>vitakka, vicāra, pīti, sukha and ekaggatā.</i> |
| 2nd trance, 3 angas: | <i>pīti, sukha and ekaggatā.</i> |
| 3rd trance, 2 angas: | <i>sukha and ekaggatā.</i> |
| 4th trance, 2 angas: | <i>upekkhā and ekaggatā.</i> |

1. pp. xxxvii, xxxix-xi. 2. p. 95. 3. p. 48. 4. p. 123.

5. Also see Dcm. iii. p. 1027.

6. Trenckner's ed. p. 253.

ment of the foetus week by week. A comparison with Atharva-veda as well as with some of the old Indian medical works like Vāgbhat's *Aṣṭāṅga-hṛdaya*,¹ and Caraka² and Suśruta³ shows that the names of the worms given by Upatissa are different from those mentioned in these works. Suśruta speaks of the development of foetus month by month and not week by week.⁴ Upatissa's exposition of the Law of Dependent Origination is quite simple and is illustrated by the simile of the rice-seed and rice-plant.⁵

(iii) We find from the comparison of these two texts that where Upatissa is brief, Buddhaghosa is prolix and where Upatissa goes into details Buddhaghosa does not. For instance, while explaining the word *atṭhāna*, Upatissa mentions⁶ only six *atṭhānas* which correspond to Buddhaghosa's *paṭibodhas* that are given by him as ten (III.109). We have already mentioned above⁷ another case where Buddhaghosa gives eight ways of cultivating mindfulness of breath (VIII.189) while Upatissa gives only four.⁸ Upatissa mentions only four advantages of cultivating *saṃādhi*,⁹ while Buddhaghosa mentions five (XI.120-24). We have also referred to (p. xxiv) another case where Upatissa mentions only ten ways, given by former teachers, of *catudhātuvaratthāna*,¹⁰ while Buddhaghosa gives thirteen. Upatissa gives only three divisions of *sīla*: *duvidha*, *tividha*, *catubbidha* (pp. 7-14). He does not speak of the *pañcavidha* class which Buddhaghosa gives. Upatissa does not speak of the five kinds mastery (*vasiyo*, p. 51) that Buddhaghosa gives in IV.151.

On the other hand Upatissa gives a detailed explanation of various kinds of *viveka*¹¹ and the five kinds of *vimutti*,¹² while Buddhaghosa does not. Upatissa gives six kinds of *pīti*,¹³ while Buddhaghosa gives only five (IV.94-100). Upatissa gives five kinds of *sukha*,¹⁴ whereas Buddhaghosa does not speak of any-

1. *Nidānasthāna*, 14. 42-56.

2. *Vimānasthāna*, 7. 9-13.

3. 54th adhyāya: Eng. Transl. by K. L. Bhishagratna, III. pp. 338-9.

4. Third adhyāya; Eng. Transl. by Bhishagratna, ii, p. 137 ff.

5. p. 104.

6. p. 32.

7. p. xxiv.

8. p. 70.

9. p. 27.

10. p. 82.

11. p. 46.

12. p. 1.

13. pp. 47.

14. p. 47.

thing of the kind. In the classification of *sīla*, *samādhi* and *paññā*, Upatissa gives several divisions which are not given by Buddhaghosa and many of them are based upon some older texts like Vibhanga. Upatissa gives a detailed list of the special distinctions¹ of the Buddha while Buddhaghosa merely refers to them (IX.124). Upatissa gives a detailed statement of the disadvantages of ill-will,² while Buddhaghosa only alludes to some suttas (IX.2).

(iv) Upatissa sometimes introduces new matter which we do not find in the corresponding portion of Buddhaghosa. For instance, Upatissa mentions several *guṇas*³ of each trance, twenty-five of the first, twenty-three of the second, twenty-two of the third and fourth trances and of the four formless (*arūpāvacara*) *samādhis*. Buddhaghosa does not say anything of the kind. Similarly, as a reward for each of these trances and *samādhis*, Upatissa names the planes of the different kinds of gods (together with their life-periods)⁴ where the *yogāvacara* is born. It is interesting to note that the life-periods assigned to these different gods by Upatissa do not agree in all cases with those given in Vibhanga (424-26), or Abhidhammatthasangaha (chap. V. para. 6).⁵ The following comparative list will be interesting:—

| | According to Upatissa | According to Abhs. & Vbh. |
|----------------------------|--------------------------|------------------------------|
| Realm of the first trance | | |
| <i>Brahma-pārisajjā</i> | ½ kappa | ½ kappa |
| <i>Brahma-purohitā</i> | ½ ,, | ½ ,, |
| <i>Mahā-brahmā</i> | 1 ,, | 1 ,, |
| Realm of the second trance | | |
| <i>Parittābhā</i> | 2 kappas | 2 kappas |
| <i>Appamāṇābhā</i> | 4 ,, | 4 ,, |
| <i>Ābhassarā</i> | 8 ,, | 8 ,, |
| Realm of the third trance | | |
| <i>Paritta-subhā</i> | 16 ,. | 16 ,. |
| <i>Appamāṇasubhā</i> | 32 ,, | 32 ,, |
| <i>Subhakinīhā</i> | 64 ,, | 64 ,, |

1. pp. 65-66.

2. p. 78.

3. pp. 47-56.

4. pp. 50-56.

5. Nor do they agree with the life-periods given by Vasubandhu in his *Abhidharmakośa*.

| | According to Upatissa | According to Abhs. & Vbh. |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------------|------------------------------|
| Realm of the fourth trance | | |
| <i>Vehapphalā</i> | | |
| <i>Asaññasattā</i> | } | 50 kappas |
| <i>Suddhāvāsā</i> | | 500 kappas |
| <i>Avihā</i> | 10,000 kappas | 1,000 kappas |
| <i>Atappā</i> | 20,000 ,, | 2,000 ,, |
| <i>Sudassā</i> | 40,000 ,, | 4,000 ,, |
| <i>Sudassī</i> | 80,000 ,, | 8,000 ,, |
| <i>Akaniṭṭhā</i> | 160,000 ,, | 16,000 ,, |
| Realm of the formless trances | | |
| <i>Ākāsañcañcāyatānūpagā</i> | 2,000 ,, | 20,000 ,, |
| <i>Viññānañcañcāyatānūpagā</i> | 4,000 ,, | 40,000 ,, |
| <i>Ākiñcaññāyatānūpagā</i> | 6,000 ,, | 60,000 ,, |
| <i>Nevasaññānāsaññāyatānūpagā</i> | 84,000 ,, | 84,000 ,, |

While explaining the anussatis, Upatissa explains or defines the subject of each of the anussatis. In his explanation of the word *Dhamma* in *Dhammānussati*, Upatissa gives a very interesting comment.¹ He explains the word *Dhamma* as *Nibbāna* and the Way to *Nibbāna*. His explanation of *Nibbāna* is the cessation of all activities (*sankhārā*), abandonment of all defilements, cessation of craving, dispassionateness and calmness. The way to *Nibbāna*, he explains, in terms of those dhammas which are known as the Thirty-seven Factors of Enlightenment (*bodhipakkhiya-dhammā*).² Compare with this Buddhaghosa's idea of *Nibbāna* in XVI.64-74.

Having noticed the points of similarity and dissimilarity, let us further see whether there is any direct or veiled reference in one book to the other, or whether there is any other evidence to make one believe in the probability of the author of one book having known the other.

It has been noted that Buddhaghosa, in his *Visuddhimagga*, often refers to the views of other philosophical systems or schools or traditions—to the views of the *Sāṅkhya*³ and *Vaiśeṣika*⁴

1. p. 66.

2. p. 66.

3. XVI. 85, 91.

4. XVI. 91, XVII. 117.

systems, of those whom he calls Believers in God or (Supreme) Controller,¹ of the Jainas,² as well as to the views of other schools or traditions (in Buddhism).³ He does not mention them by their specific name but uses some word that is peculiarly characteristic of each of them or simply uses words like 'eke. ekacce, keci, aññe, apare, or yo pana vadeyya, etc.' leaving it to the reader to imagine whom the cap fits. For our purpose, we are to confine ourselves to Buddhaghosa's references to other schools within the pale of Buddhism. Upatissa also often gives the views of other schools,⁴ introducing them simply with a remark such as 'and it is said', 'further it is said.' Such references to the views of other schools made by Buddhaghosa and Upatissa in their books, we shall classify in the following way:

- (A) Those views that have been referred to by Buddhaghosa as well as by Upatissa.
- (B) Those views that have been ascribed to 'some' by one author and found to be exactly tallying with the views held by the other.

It is well-known that Buddhaghosa belonged to the school of the Theravādins and accepted the tradition of the Mahāvihāra school in Ceylon. In his prefatory remarks to the Visuddhimagga, Buddhaghosa definitely says that he would give the exposition of the Path of Purity, according to the traditional interpretation of those who belong to the Mahāvihāra (I.4).

(A) (i) In the Visuddhimagga, I.19, while giving the various interpretations of the word *sīla*, Buddhaghosa says that there are others who interpret the word *sīla*, also in the sense of 'head' (*sira*), or in the sense of 'cool' (*sītala*). These same interpretations as well as a few others are given by Upatissa in 1.6.3-10.⁵

(ii) In the Visuddhimagga III.78, Buddhaghosa says that there are others who would make three other cariyās—by way of craving, (*tañhā*), egoism (*māna*) and false belief (*ditthi*). Upatissa also refers to this view as an alternative to his view, but he remarks that these three are included in his fourteen, as

1. XVI. 30, 85; XVII. 22, 50, 117; XIX. 3; XXII. 119.

2. XVI. 85, XVII. 62.

3. I. 19, 38; II. 78, 79; III. 74, 78, 80, 96; XIV. 71; XV. 39; XVI. 52; XVII. 8, 14, 223; XXIII. 4, 7, 11.

4. In addition to those of the older sources referred to on pp. xxiv-xxv.

5. p. 5.

they are not different in meaning from some of those that are included in his fourteen.¹

(iii) While speaking of the *nimitta* of the *ānāpānasati*, Buddhaghosa says in VIII.214, "There are some who say that the *nimitta* appears to some one, giving a pleasurable contact like that of soft cotton, or cotton-wool, or like a gentle breeze of wind." In the next paragraph, however, Buddhaghosa gives the opinion of the *Atthakathās* which he apparently accepts. Now, Upatissa gives a passage in which we can trace the expressions used by Buddhaghosa to express both these views.²

(iv) Buddhaghosa refers in IX.112 to the views of some people who believed that all the four appamaññās can have all the four or five trances. Upatissa refers to this same view and quotes³ the very passage from A. iv. 300 given by Buddhaghosa.

(v) In the Visuddhimagga XIV.42, Buddhaghosa refers to the views of some regarding the sensitive parts of the five sense-organs. "There are others who say that the eye is the sensitive part in which the element of fire is predominant, the ear, the nose, tongue and the body are the sensitive parts in which the elements of space, wind, water, earth, respectively, predominate." This same view is given in a detailed manner by Upatissa.⁴

(vi) Like Buddhaghosa, Upatissa also believed in the simultaneous penetration into all the Four Truths. Upatissa refers to the view of those who believed in the attainment of Truths in successive stages (*nānābhismaya*) and points out in detail the flaws in this view of theirs. He gives seven flaws,⁵ at least two of which can be identified with some of the refutations of this theory, given in the Kathāvatthu i.213, para. 5 ff., 216 para. 10. Buddhaghosa refers to the theorists who held such views and dismisses them by saying that an answer to them has been given in the Kathāvatthu.⁶

(B) (i) In the Visuddhimagga II. 78, Buddhaghosa refers to a view of some who hold that there is an *akusala dhutanga*. In II. 79, he also mentions those who think that the *dhutanga* is '*kusalattikavini-muttam*'. Now, Upatissa seems to be holding

1. p. 34.

2. p. 70.

3. p. 81-82. •

4. p. 96.

5. p. 120-21.

6. According to the Kathāvatthu-Commentary, this view was held by the Andhakas, Sabbatthavādins, Sammitiyas and Bhadrayānikas (see Points of Controversy, p. 130).

a view which corresponds to the latter of these views.¹ In the Commentary on the Visuddhimagga, Dhammapāla commenting on the word 'those (*yesam*)' says that by this word, Buddhaghosa refers to those who lived in the Abhayagiri (Monastery). [Abhayagirivāsike sandhāya āha, p. 96, Burmese edition.]

(ii) In the Visuddhimagga III.74, Buddhaghosa refers to the views of those who held the belief in fourteen cariyās, instead of six according to his belief. This same view of fourteen cariyās is accepted by Upatissa.²

(iii) There is a very important passage for our purpose in the Visuddhimagga III.80, which read with Dhammapāla's comment, goes a long way to determine the relation between Buddhaghosa's Visuddhimagga and Upatissa's Vimuttimagga. There,³ Buddhaghosa says: *Tatra, purimā tāva tisso cariyā pubbāciṇṇanidānā, dhātu-dosa-nidānā cā ti ekacce vadanti.* "There are *some* who say that the first three cariyās of these are determined by one's past actions, by [the excess of some of] the four great elements and of the humours." Exactly this same theory is advocated by Upatissa.

Dhammapāla in his Paramattha-mañjūsā, the Commentary on Buddhaghosa's Visuddhimagga, says,⁴ while commenting on the word *ekacce* (p. 113 Burmese ed.): "*Ekacce ti Upatis-sattheram sandhāyāha. Tena hi Vimuttimagge tathā vuttam.*." "The word 'some' is used with reference to the Elder **Upatissa**. He has said so in the **Vimuttimagga**." This is a very important comment by Dhammapāla for our purpose.

(iv) In continuation of the same passage, Buddhaghosa says in III.81: "They explain that one becomes *rāgacarita* when there is excess of the humour of phlegm and one becomes *mohacarita* when there is excess of the humour of wind. Or, that one becomes *mohacarita* when there is excess of the humour of phlegm and *rāgacarita* when there is excess of the humour of wind." Buddhaghosa in the next para-

1. pp. 23-24.

2. p. 34.

3. p. 35.

4. My attention was drawn to this passage by Prof. M. Nagai. He himself was informed of this passage by Nyanatiloka who has published [1931] the first volume of his German translation of the Visuddhimagga. In his introduction to that book, on p. 6, he has quoted this Chinese passage from our Chinese version of the Vimuttimagga. See also 'Pratitya-Samutpāda-śāstra' des Ullangha' von Vasudev Gokhle, [Bonn, 1930] n. 10 foot-note 2.

graph, III.82, points out a defect in this argument, that this explains only *rāga* and *moha* (*rāga-moha-dvayamēva vuttam*). He means that there is no explanation of *dosa*. And another defect that he points out is that in the alternative explanation, the statement goes just counter to the statement in the first alternative. And so, he brushes aside the argument and concludes 'all this is an indiscriminate statement (*sabbametam aparicchinnavacanam*).'

Now it is curious to note that the argument that Upatissa offers is the same that is put in the mouth of these people by Buddhaghosa except that his statement explains not only *rāga* and *moha* but also *dosa*. To make this point clear, let me reproduce the Pāli rendering of the relevant passage¹ in our Chinese text: *Semhādhiko rāga-carito, pittādhiko dosa-carito, vātādhiko moha-carito. Aparañ ca vuttam: semhādhiko moha-carito, vātādhiko rāga-carito.*" Here we see that in the first part of this statement all the three, *rāga*, *dosa*, *moha* are mentioned, while it is only in the last part that only two, *moha* and *rāga*, are mentioned, and this can be explained by saying that the exchange in the two alternatives is between *rāga* and *moha* only, the second term 'dosa' is not mentioned because it remains unaffected.

If we believe in the authoritative statement of Dhammapāla that Buddhaghosa alludes to Upatissa and his Vimuttimagga, does this statement of Buddhaghosa imply that he misunderstood the point of view of his opponent or is it an example of deliberate twisting by Buddhaghosa of his opponent's statement?

(v) We have already pointed out² that Buddhaghosa, while speaking about the extension of the *nimitta* of the *Brahmavihāra* says in III.113-114 that it should not be extended. He allows the extension of only the ten *kasinas* (III.109). Buddhaghosa dwells on this point of extension and shows his reasons why the *nimitta* of the *Brahmavihāra* should not be extended. It appears obvious, though he does not definitely say so, that Buddhaghosa has some people in mind, who hold this view. Now, Upatissa says (3.7a. 6-7) that the *nimitta* of the *kasinas* and *Brahmavihāras* may be extended.³

(vi) In the Visuddhimagga IV.114, Buddhaghosa says: *Paṭipadāvisuddhi nāma sa-sambhāriko upacāro, upekkhānubrūhanā nāma appanā, sampahāṃsanā nāma paccavelkhanā ti*

evameke vanṇayanti”. “There are some who interpret the purity of the course as the neighbourhood-trance together with its accompanying things, the cultivation of equanimity as the raptured state of trance, and gladdening as reflection.” Buddhaghosa rejects this interpretation on the authority of a passage from the *Paṭisambhidā* and gives his own interpretation. Now Upatissa accepts exactly this interpretation¹ of those terms and the whole passage as given by him (4.17.10-4.17a.1) is identical in words with the passage quoted above from Buddhaghosa. Dhammapāla here again comes to our rescue. He gives us valuable information. He explains this word *eke* as *Abhayagirivāsino*, ‘those who lived in the *Abhayagiri* [monastery].’

(vii) In the detailed enumeration of rūpās, Buddhaghosa gives, as we have already noted (p. xxxi), twenty-eight rūpas (XIV.71). He mentions several other rūpas, which some others would like to include, but he rejects them all, giving his reasons. Among these rūpas, Buddhaghosa mentions *jātirūpa* and *middharūpa*. Regarding the last, he says: *Ekaccānaṇ matena middharūpāṇ*. Both these rūpas Upa. includes in his list, which according to him consists of thirty rūpas.² Here also, Dhammapāla is of great help to us. He comments on the word *ekaccānaṇ* as *Abhayagirivāsinaṇ*.³ Upatissa and his school had a very consistent view about *middharūpa* and we have already dealt with it above.⁴

(viii) While discussing the *phalasamāpatti*, Buddhaghosa refers in XXIII.7 to those who believed that the Sotāpannas and Sakadāgāmis cannot have *phalasamāpatti*, but only those that occupy a higher stage than these (i.e. the Anāgāmis and the Arhats) can have. He also states the reason given by them, that only these last two have reached perfection in *saṃādhi*. He rejects their point of view on the ground that even an ordinary man (*puthujjana*) can attain the state of [perfection in a] *lokiya-saṃādhi*, and further, not wishing to bother himself with giving any more reasons, simply says: “Why think of reason or no reason? Has it not been said in the Sacred Texts.....?” He gives a quotation from Ps. i. 68 to support his own view that all ariyas can have *phalasamāpatti*. Now Upatissa’s position (12.6.6) exactly corresponds to the view of these

1. p. 49.

2. p. 95.

3. Burmese edition of *Paramatthamanjūsā*, Vol. II. p. 520.

4. p. xxxi.

theorists¹ referred to by Buddhaghosa and he states exactly the same reason put in the mouth of these theorists by Buddhaghosa.

It is curious to note that, immediately after this, Upatissa also makes a reference² to those who held that all Ariyas can have *phalasamāpatti* and states as their authority the same passage from Ps. i. 68 (which Upatissa merely indicates by giving introductory words) on the strength of which Buddhaghosa supports his own view and rejects that of his opponent.

(ix) In the Visuddhimagga XXIII. 11, Buddhaghosa again refers to the views of those who believed that the *Sotāpanna*, starting penetrative insight with the intention of the attainment of the fruit (*phalasamāpatti*), becomes *Sakadāgāmī*, the *Sakadāgāmī* becomes *Anāgāmī*. Upatissa's position is exactly the same³ (12.17.5). Here again Dhammapāla is helpful⁴ to us in giving the information that this statement is made with reference to the Abhayagirivādins.

Buddhaghosa continuing his argument points out the difficulty if the position of his opponent is accepted. He says that by accepting the view advocated by his opponents, we will be driven to conclude that an *Anāgāmī* becomes an Arhat, an Arhat a *Pacceka-buddha* and a *Pacceka-buddha* a *Buddha*.

Upatissa seems to have anticipated this objection and he answers (12.17.5) that an *Anāgāmī*, while starting his penetrative insight for the *attainment* of the Fruit cannot immediately reach the Path of Arhatship, because he does not produce *vipassanā dassana* as it is not the thing aimed at by him, and because his reflection is not powerful enough⁵ [to enable him to reach the path of Arhatship].

Having studied the internal evidence of our two texts in so far as the similarity and dis-similarity of the ideas and in so far as reference to philosophical views or doctrinal points is concerned, let us now turn our attention to proper names—names, either of books, places, or personages mentioned in the Vimuttimagga.

Proper names.

Texts.

(i) One cannot fail to notice the names of two or three works referred to by Upatissa. He quotes from Sān Tsāng 三藏 at three different times⁶ and one of these quotations exactly agrees, as we have already noticed (p. xxv), with the quotation from the

b

1. p. 125. 2. p. 125. 3. p. 127.

4. Burmese edition of Paramatthamanjūsā Vol. II. p. 896.

5. p. 126.

6. pp. 46, 47, 49.

Peṭaka given by Buddhaghosa in IV.86. The other two quotations I could trace in the Peṭakopadesa of Mahākaccāna, VIIth Chapter, pp. 157, 158 of Hardy's Manuscript (in Roman characters) preserved in the State Library of Berlin, a photographic copy of which I could secure some years ago. There is an edition of the Peṭakopadesa¹ in Burmese characters printed in the Zabu Meit Swe Press, Rangoon, 1917 and the passages in question are found on p. 191 of that edition. At the end of several chapters (iii, v, viii) of the Peṭakopadesa we read the name of the author Mahākaccāna residing in Jambūvana. Prof. Hardy in his Introduction (pp. x-xvi) to the Netti-Pakarāṇa advances a view on the supposed authority of Dhammapāla's Commentary on Netti, that Peṭaka is an abbreviated name of the Peṭakopadesa.

But this does not seem to me to be correct. I think Prof. Hardy has misunderstood the commentary. In the Commentary on the Netti-pakarāṇa, Dhammapāla mentions by name both the works, Peṭaka and Peṭakopadesa, separately. In the Sinhalese edition of this book edited by Widurupola Piyatissa-thera in the Simon Hewavitarāṇa Bequest Fund Series, vol. IX, Peṭaka is mentioned on p. 1, verse 12, and on p. 3 a quotation is given from the Peṭaka²:

*Yattha ca sabbe hārā sampatamānā nayanti suttatthām
byañjanavidhī puthuttā sū bhāmi hāra-sampāto 'ti.*

On the other hand, we find the following passages: *tathā hi agarahitāya ācariya-paramparāya Peṭakopadeso³ viya idam Netti-pakaranam āgatam* (p. 3). *Ayam ca attho Peṭakopadesena⁴ vibhāvetabbo* (p. 175). And here are reproduced extracts which can be identified in the available Text of the Peṭakopadesa.⁵ But the quotation ascribed here to Peṭaka is not traced. So also, although two of the three quotations referred to above are found in the Peṭakopadesa, the quotation which is ascribed by Buddhaghosa to Peṭaka I could not so far trace. Dhammapāla in his Commentary on the Visuddhimagga refers to Peṭaka, almost in a similar context, no less than three times (pp. 153, 194, 874). When he mentions it for the first time, he explains it as *Mahākaccānattherena desitam Piṭakānam samvaṇṇanā*. Therefore, it seems to be a different work and hence we cannot identify it with Peṭakopadesa. The Chinese characters used for Sān-Tsāng ordi-

1. Also see Specimen des Petakopadesa von Rudolf Fuchs, Berlin, 1908. 2. Netti, pp. x-xi. 3. Netti, p. xi. 4. Netti, p. 241.

5. See NettiCm. (referred to above), Introd. p. 6.

narily mean Ti-piṭaka but here they may stand for some specific work. Przyluski in his 'Le Concile de Rajagr̥ha' p. 109 gives these characters and suggests that they may stand for Saṃ[yukta]-piṭaka. He also mentions Peṭakopadesa on p. 74 of the book. Yamakami in his 'Systems of Buddhistic Thought' mentions (p. 175) Sen-Cwhan, but in the absence of the original Chinese characters it would be hazardous to give its Indian equivalent. Under these circumstances, it would not be safe to identify Sān-tsāng with Peṭakopadesa. Nor can we identify it with Peṭaka until we know more of both of these names, although the possibility of such identification is not precluded.

While speaking of the advantages of *Buddhānussati*, Upatissa quotes from Shiu-to-lo-Nieh-ti-li-chu 修多羅涅底里句. The quotation says that one who desires to reflect upon the Buddha is worthy to be respected like a place with the image of the Buddha.¹ To this Buddhaghosa has a corresponding remark in VIII.67: "Even the body of the man, who is given to the reflection upon the Buddha becomes worthy to be worshipped like a temple." At another place, in his treatment of *Maranasati*, Upatissa gives a quotation from Nie-ti-li-po-tho'-shiu-to-lo² 涅底履波陀修多羅 which purports to say that if a man wants to reflect upon death, he should reflect upon a dead person and see the cause of his death. Now both these texts appear to be the same, the only difference being that in one case the word chu 句 seems to be used as a translation of the word *pada* and in another case po-tho 波陀 a trans-literation of the same word 'pada' is used.

Upatissa, like Buddhaghosa, also refers to the *Haliddavasana-sutta*³ by using the Chinese translation (Yellow-Garment-Sutta) of that name. Upatissa constantly refers to the *Abhidhamma*, in which he seems to include also *Paṭisambhidā*, for passages definitely known to be from that text are given by Upatissa as from the *Abhidhamma*.⁴

Places.

(ii) Now we come to the names of places. While speaking of the round *kasiṇa*, Upatissa says 'as round as *Jambudīpa*' (4.1a.5). In another place he speaks of the way to the country of Pāṭaliputta (Po-li-phu-to⁵ 波利弗多).

1. p. 62.

2. p. 72; the Sanskrit rendering of this title would be 'Netripada-sūtra'; Cf. *Netripadaśāstra* of Sthavira Upagupta. [Abhidharmakośa ii. 205]. 3. p. 82. 4. See pp. 4, 125. 5. p. 85.

Upatissa also refers to the Magadha country (6.13.8) and to the river Nerañjarā (p. 64).

(iii) Let us now take the names of personages. It is interesting to note that in the section on *Marapasati*, Upatissa refers, among other names, to the names of the hoary sages, Vessāmitta (San. Viśvāmitra) and Yamataggi¹ [San. Jamadagni, to which the Chinese transliteration Jā-mo-thā-li (闍摩達梨 7.9a.8.) corresponds], while Buddhaghosa refers (VIII. 19) to comparatively later personages in Hindu mythology, like Bhimasena, Yuddhiṣṭhila (San. Yudhiṣṭhira), Vāsudeva, Cāṇūra. We also find the names of gods like Yāmā, Tūśitā (6.20a.6), Akaniṣṭha, etc. He also refers to mythological personages like Mahāsudassna, Jotika, Jātiла, Ghosita (9.2a.8), Mahāgovinda, etc. He has also given the names of [Ālāra] Kālāma, Uddaka Rāmaputta (5.12a.8-9). We find Upatissa mentioning the name of Gotama as well as the names of great Buddhist Worthies like Sāriputta, Moggallāna, Ānanda, Anuruddha, Sobhita, Cūlāpanthaka, Bakkula, Sañjīva, etc. Towards the end of the book while speaking about *vipphārasamādhi*, Upatissa gives a name which seems to be a Chinese transliteration of the name Moggaliputtatissa.² Most of these names are the Chinese transliterations of Indian names, except in a few cases like the names Sañjīva, Cūlāpanthaka, which Sanghāpāla respectively translates as 正命 Right-Life (Sam̄-jīva), 小路 Small-Road. Quite a few of these names occur in the quotations from the Pāli texts which Upatissa gives.

Like these proper names which are retained in Chinese transliterations, it is interesting to note that there are many other words transliterated into Chinese by Sanghāpāla, which point to the Indian origin of the words. These words may be classified as follows:—

Transliterations of Indian words.

Words like *Caṇḍāla* (10.9a.7), *Niganṭha* (2.10a.8).

Words like Ācariya (ācārya: ā-cā-li), *Upajjhāya*, *Veda* (Wui-tho).

Names of semi-divine beings like *Asura* (9.6a.9.), *Yakkha*, (9.6a.9), *Rakkhasa* (6.13.1), *Gandhabba* (kān-to-po 7.8.4.).

1. See D. i. 184, 239-43; A. iv. 61.

2. p. 127. It is a point to be considered why this name is inserted in the Vim. In the corresponding Pāli passage from Ps. we find the names of only Sāriputta and Sañjīva. Can this be an interpolation? For, Mal. (p. 42) tells us on the authority of Nikāya-Sangraha that the Vajjiputtakas who joined the Abhayagiri sect did not accept the authority of Moggaliputta-Tissa.

Names of the nine divisions of Buddhist literature like *Sutta*, *Shiu-to-lo*, *Geyya*, *Veyyākaraṇa*, etc. (9.16a.89).

Technical words in Buddhism, such as *Dhuta* (2.1.4), *Sangha*, *Samatha* (4.15a.3) *Vipassanā*, (4.15a.4) *Maṇḍala* (4.1a.6) *Pāti-mokkha*, *Pārami* (8.8.10 ff), *Nibbāna*, *Pāññā* (pāñ-ro 9.16.10), *Sanghārāma* (2.6a.1), *Araññā* (7.1a.3), *Khana* (chā-nā 7.7a.9), *Dāna* (thāñ 8.7.10), *Samādhi* (sāñ-mī, 6.2a.1-2), *Kalala* (kyā-lo-lo), *Abbuda* (ā-phu-tho 7.13a.10), etc.

Names of offences mentioned in the Vinaya, like *Pārājikā* (1.16a.8), *Sanghādisesa* (1.16a.8).

Names of garments: *Kāsāva* (12.18.7), *Sanghāti* (2.2a.7), *Uttarāsanga* (2.2a.8) *Antarāvāsaka* (2.2a.8), *Koseyya*, *Kambala* (2.7.3).

Names of fruits and trees like, *Amba*, (San. *āmra* : ām-lo), *Kovidāra* 3.2.6).

Names of scented wood: *Candana*, *Tagara* (7.13a.1).

Names of flowers and lotuses, such as, *Uppala*, *Paduma*, *Puṇḍarīka* (5.7a.9) *Kumuda* (7.13.6-7), *Kaṇṇikāra* (5.21.2).

Periods of time, *Asankheyya*.

Number, *Nahuta* (San: *nayuta* : Nā-yu-thā).

There are some words which are sometimes translated and sometimes transliterated such as *samādhi*, *paññā*, *ānāpāna* 7.1.5 ff). And even the transliteration is not always the same. For instance, for *uppala*, we have sometimes *yu-to-lo*, (5.8.2) or sometimes *yu-po-lo* (5.7a.3) or even *to-lo* (10.20a.3); for *Abhidhamma*, we sometimes have *pi-tā*, or *ā-pi-tā*, or sometimes we have *ā-pi-tā-mo*; for *ācariya* we have *ā-vā-li* or *cā-li* (2.7.10); for Arhat we have *ā-lo-hān* or *lo-hān* (6.18.4).

Reference
to a
Caṇḍāla.

Let us note one peculiar fact about Upatissa. He seems to have some kind of contempt for, or a low opinion of, a *Caṇḍāla*. He refers to a *Caṇḍāla* in three different places. In one place,¹ there is a reference to a *Caṇḍāla* where we are told in a simile that he has no desire for a princely throne.² At another place³ (2.7.10), to see a *Caṇḍāla* on the way is considered to be a sufficient reason for the laxity in the observance of the practice of *sapadāna-cārikā* (going from house to house in succession for begging one's food). Upatissa says that if a mendicant sees a *Caṇḍāla* on the way, he should cover his begging-bowl and may

1. p. 15.

2. A similar idea is also found in A. i. 107, A. iii. 214.

3. p. 23.

skip over some houses and go further.¹ In the third place we find lack of conscientiousness (*ahirika*) is compared to a *Caṇḍāla*.²

This sort of contempt for a *Caṇḍāla* is something foreign to the original teaching of Buddhism, and in fact, in the early days of Buddhism, we find several people of the lowest class being even admitted to the Buddhist Sangha.³

Having thus seen practically everything that is valuable in the internal evidence of the *Vimuttimagga*, as far as the subject-matter is concerned, let us now turn to the manner of expression, or the style of composition of this *Vimuttimagga*, as we have it now in its Chinese translation.

It is admittedly a treatise of the *Abhidhamma* and we find that its style of composition is in keeping with the style of the *Abhidhamma* books. A subject is treated by setting up a number of questions and then answering them one after another. He gives the *lakkhaṇa*, *rasa*, *paccupatṭhāna*, and *padaṭṭhāna* of almost everything that forms the subject of his exposition. Occasionally, as in the case of *Mettā*⁴ etc., he also gives *sampatti* and *vipatti*. He treats the different sections of a particular subject separately, and then makes general remarks on all the different sections taken together. We see, for instance, that he treats *mettā*, *karunā*, *muditā*, and *upekkhā*, or *rūpa*, *vedanā*, *saññā*, *sankhāra* and *viññāṇa* separately and then gives, like Buddhaghosa, general remarks under *pakīṇṇakakathā*.⁵ Unlike Buddhaghosa, he gives no stories at all to illustrate his point. Like Buddhaghosa, he makes use of quotations from the Pāli texts, or other sources that are available to him. He also quotes a number of gāthās as well as prose passages. We have already seen above that Upatissa was a skilful master in the use of similes. We have also noted that his interpretations are simple and quite natural. They are free from scholastic artificiality of Buddhaghosa.

If we look closely at the mode of translation accepted by Sanghapāla, we find that very often he tries to be quite literal, and naturally the Chinese translation would give no idea unless one knows the original technical words in Pāli or Sanskrit for which the Chinese renderings stand. Sometimes we find, as in

Style of
the Vim.

Method of
transla-
tion.

1. p. 23.

2. p. 99.

3. See *Thera-Gāthā*, 480-486 attributed to Sopāka; *Psalms of the Brethren*. p. 233.

4. pp. 79-80.

5. pp. 56, 59, 62, 78, 81, 87, 91, etc.

Tibetan translations of Buddhist Sanskrit works, that even the prefixes are translated by corresponding words in Chinese. We have already seen above how even the prefix *Sañ* in the name *Sañjiva* is translated by 世, the Chinese equivalent of that prefix. Similarly, the prefix *pati* or *pañi* in the word *pañibhāga* is translated by *pi* 彼 and the Chinese equivalent for the whole word *pañibhāga* is *pi-phan* 彼分. Technical words like *bhavanga*, *tadārammāna*, *upapattibhava* are quite literally translated by 有分, 彼事, 生有 respectively.

We have thus considered practically all the aspects of the internal evidence bearing on our problem, afforded by our texts, particularly by the Vimuttimagga. Let us now take a review of all the facts that we have learnt from the internal or external evidence.

A review.

We have seen that both the texts often quote from the same older sources like the Pāli texts of the Canon, the *Porāṇas*, the *Pubbācariyas*, the *Āṭthakathās*, some specific work like the *Peñaka* or *Sān-Tsāng* 三藏 or some other common source which we may or may not be able to locate. We have also seen that although Upatissa uses some similes, which are common to the Visuddhimagga, still he has many similes of his own which show that he is a skilful master in handling similes or metaphors or illustrations. We have noted (p. xxvii) that he has some protracted similes which we do not find in the Visuddhimagga. We have also observed that in spite of some correspondences due to the common material which is drawn upon by both of them, Upatissa has some peculiar doctrinal points, which are quite distinct from those held by Buddhaghosa. In fact, Buddhaghosa is definitely opposed to several of those points. It has been seen that along with these differences in doctrinal points, there is also a difference in the interpretation of some words and in the treatment of some topics. Upatissa's interpretations are simpler and more natural than Buddhaghosa's and often they agree with the interpretations given in older works like the *Vibhanga*. There is a difference in the general exposition of even some sections such as those on Dependent Origination (*hetu-paccayā* or *pañicca-samuppāda*), on *Vedanā*, *Sāññā*, *Sankhāra* and *Viññāṇa*. In the comparative table of contents, we have noticed that Upatissa gives the whole of the last chapter to *Sacca-pariccheda*, although he has already given a part of the eleventh chapter for the exposition of the Noble Truths (*Saccāni*). Further, we have also noticed that there are about

half a dozen references in both the books to the same views held by some other theorists, that there are at least nine references in Buddhaghosa's Visuddhimagga to the views of others, whom he merely calls 'others' or 'some', but which exactly tally with the views advocated or accepted by Upatissa in his Vimuttimagga. Incidentally, from the external evidence afforded by Dhammapāla's Commentary on the Visuddhimagga, we have noted that in at least four of these cases, the reference is to the Abhayagiri-vādins. And besides, the most important reference for our purpose is the mention that Dhammapāla makes in one case. He definitely refers to Upatissa and his book, the Vimuttimagga, and says that Buddhaghosa has these [two] in his mind. We have seen that where one goes into a detailed treatment, the other is concise, or that where one is concise, the other goes into details. We have noted that occasionally Upatissa introduces quite a new matter. We find that Upatissa refers to a work called Sān Tsāng 三藏 (a quotation from which tallies with a passage ascribed by Buddhaghosa to Peṭaka) and to another work called Shiu-to-lo-Nieh-ti-li or Nieh-ti-li-po-tho-Shiu-to-lo, which so far we could not identify with any known Text. In the names of personages mentioned by Upatissa, we noticed two important names of Viśvāmitra and Jamadagni, the hoary sages of Brahmanical literature, as contrasted with Bhīmasena, Yudhiṣṭhīra, Vāsudeva, Cāṇūra, personages of later Hindu mythology. We have also seen how even in the Chinese translation, Sanghapāla retained many Indian words in their Chinese transliterations. And lastly we have also noted Upatissa's attitude towards the Candālas which seems to be rather inconsistent with the original attitude of the Buddha and his early followers.

When we consider all these facts in the light of the external evidence afforded by Dhammapāla's comment, what conclusion shall we be justified in drawing? When we take our stand on Dhammapāla's explicit testimony in one case that Buddhaghosa alludes to Upatissa and his Vimuttimagga, and that in four other cases the reference is to Abhayagiri-vādins, shall we not be justified in drawing conclusion that Buddhaghosa, while writing several paragraphs in his book, Visuddhimagga, has Abhayagiri-vādins and Upatissa's Vimuttimagga in his mind, although he does not refer to them by name? As a natural corollary, Upatissa must be supposed to have advocated the views which were later accepted by the Abhayagiri-vādins.

But it might be argued what about the other two cases (p. xlii) that we have also noted above—one in which Upatissa refers to a view that is supported by Buddhaghosa, and the other in which Upatissa seems to have anticipated the objection raised by Buddhaghosa to the view held by him?

In view of the overwhelming evidence that we have given above in favour of the *probability* that Upatissa and his school have been at the back of the mind of Buddhaghosa, we can explain these allusions by Upatissa on the ground that they do not refer to the views of Buddhaghosa and his Visuddhimagga, but to the views that later came to be identified with those of the school of Mahāvihāra.

Here one may raise the question: 'Is the evidence given by Dhammapāla a reliable one?' Let us try to answer this question.

Dhamma-
pāla.

At the end of the Paramatthamañjūsā, the Commentary on Buddhaghosa's Visuddhimagga, we find the colophon: *Badaratitthavihāravāsinā Ācariya-Dhammapālena katā Paramatthamañjūsā nāma Visuddhimagga-Tikā samattā*. 'Here ends the Commentary on the Visuddhimagga, the Commentary composed by Ācariya-Dhammapāla, who resided in Badaratitthavihāra'. At the end of the commentaries on works like Thera- Therī- Gāthā, Petavatthu, Vimānavatthu, and Netti-pakaraṇa we find the same information about Dhammapāla that he lived in the Badaratitthavihāra. So it appears to be evident that the author of the Paramatthamañjūsā and the author of the commentaries on Thera- Gāthā, Therī- Gāthā, Petavatthu, Vimānavatthu and Netti-pakaraṇa, are one and the same person. Sāsanavaṇṇa (p. 33) tells us the same fact about Ācariya Dhammapāla, and further we learn that Dhammapāla also composed the Tikās on the Dīgha, Majjhima and Saṃyutta Nikāyas and Sāriputta composed the Tikas on the Anguttara Nikāya. It, further, states that the Badaratittha is in the country of Damiḷas, not far from the island of Ceylon. Gandhavaṇṇa (p. 60) also mentions among fourteen works ascribed to Ācariya Dhammapāla, the Commentary on the Visuddhimagga, and the Aṭṭhakathās on the Netti-pakaraṇa, Thera Gāthā, Petavatthu, Vimānavatthu, etc.

This Ācariya Dhammapāla is supposed, though there is no *direct* evidence for this, to have lived not long after Buddhaghosa himself. There is only an indirect evidence that we get from their works. Both belong to the same tradition and seem to be drawing upon the same old material. At the end of the

commentaries on the *Petavatthu*, *Vimānavatthu* and *Therī-Gāthā*, Dhammapāla says that for the composition of his commentaries he has used the old *Āṭhakathās* (*Porāṇa-Āṭhakathā*). So it is very likely that there was not very long time that elapsed between Buddhaghosa and Dhammapāla.¹ When the famous Chinese traveller, Yuan Chuān, speaks of his visit to Kāñcīpura in South India, in or about 640 A.D., he tells us that Kāñcīpura was the birthplace of Dharmapāla.² Although there is no definite proof to show that he was the same as our Dhammapāla, still it is very likely, says Dr. Rhys Davids,³ that the reference is to our Dhammapāla.

It will thus be seen that if Dhammapāla, who, as we have noted, may not have lived long after Buddhaghosa, (perhaps not later than two centuries), makes a definite statement about a certain school such as that of Abhayagirivādins or about Upatissa and his book, we have no reason to doubt it, especially when it is supported by other circumstantial evidence.

Let us see what circumstantial evidence we get from the historical and religious conditions in Ceylon at the time of Buddhaghosa's arrival in that country.

It is common knowledge that Buddhaghosa belonged to the Mahāvihāra School which had in his time a powerful rival in the school of the Abhayagiri-vihāra. To understand the situation in Ceylon at this time let us go into more details about the history of the Abhayagiri school.⁴

On the spot where the Abhayagiri monastery stood there was in very early times a *Titthārāma*, a place of residence for holy men who belonged to other religions.⁵ The Abhayagiri monastery was established in Ceylon 218 years after the establishment of the Mahāvihāra monastery.⁶ This was so called because it was established by King Abhaya (Vatṭagāmaṇi) and because it was established in a place where a Niganṭha by name Giri was living. It was given over to Mahātissa, who subsequently was

History of
Abhayagiri.

1. Winternitz, II. 161.

2. Beal, Records of the Western World, II. p. 230.

3. E.R.E. IV. pp. 701-702.

4. This information about the Abhayagiri school has been already published by me in my article 'Vimuttimagga and the School of Abhayagirivihāra in Ceylon' in the Journal of the University of Bombay, Vol. V, part iii, Nov. 1936.

5. Mv. X. pp. 98-102; Mal. p. 19.

6. To be exact, 217 years, ten months and ten days; See Mv. XXXIII. pp. 79-81; also compare Dipa. XIX. pp. 14, 16.

expelled from the Sangha of the Mahāvihāra on a charge of having too much of worldly contact. One of his disciples, being enraged with the community of the Mahāvihāra for the expulsion of his teacher, left that *vihāra* with some followers and established a new sect which subsequently came to be called by the name of Abhayagirivādins. These people branched off from the Theravāda of the Mahāvihāra.¹ They split the Theravāda-monks a second time when they broke the community of monks at the Dakkhināvihāra.²

This Abhayagiri school which owed its origin purely to a disciplinary measure against an individual, gradually came to be a centre of Buddhist monks, who did not agree with the community at the Mahāvihāra on doctrinal points.³ Many monks from Pallar(? l)ārāma in India came to Ceylon. They belonged to the Vajjiputta-Nikāya descended from those who refused to recognize Moggaliputta-Tissa's council. Their teacher was Ācariya Dhammaruci. He, finding no favour with the Mahāvihāra community, joined the Abhayagiri fraternity, which thenceforward came to be known as Dhammaruci-Nikāya.⁴ This school continued to disturb the peace of Ceylonese monks for nearly twelve centuries and the monks belonging to this sect no doubt produced literary works setting forth their own point of view.⁵ Unfortunately, however, religious intolerance led to the persecution of the monks of the Abhayagiri sect and many of their books were burnt.

The Abhayagirivādins were on the descent or on the ascent as the central political power in Ceylon persecuted them or supported them. From the history of Ceylon we learn that King Gothābhaya banished (about 254 A.D.)⁶ sixty monks from Abhayagiri who were called Vetyulyavādins and who were supposed to be great 'thorns' (*kaṇṭaka*) in the religion of the Buddha. At another time, we read, during the reign of King

1. Mv. XXXIII. p. 96.

2. Ibid. p. 99.

3. Yuan-Chwan had heard that the Mahāvihāravāsins were strict Hinayānists, whereas the Abhayagirivādins studied both the Hinayāna and Mahāyāna. (Kern's Manual of Buddhism p. 126).

4. Sv. p. 24; Mal. p. 42. Cf. MvCm i pp. 175-76: *Dhammarucikā ti ime Abhayagirivāsino bhikkhū.*

5. Mal. pp. 43, 128-129; we are told that even now some works of this sect exist. Cf. Legge Travels, p. 111.

6. Reginald Farrer, Old Ceylon, p. 288. Mv. XXXVI. pp. 111-112.

Mahāsenā¹ (275-302 A.D.), **Mahāvihāra** was left by monks as they were being persecuted by the King. Ruins of **Lohapāsāda** were taken to **Abhayagiri** and **Abhayagiri** prospered.²

At the time when Buddhaghosa came to Ceylon, King **Mahānāma**³ was ruling. **Mahānāma**, before he became the king, was a member of the Order. He became infatuated with the wife of his brother **Upatissa**, who was subsequently killed by her. **Mahānāma** left the Order, seized the throne, and married his brother's wife. The **Mahāvihāra** community did not look with favor at the treachery of **Mahānāma**. So **Mahānāma** and his wife were supporting the **Abhayagiri** School.⁴

We have another testimony to support our belief that the **Abhayagiri** sect was in a prosperous condition when Buddhaghosa visited Ceylon. **Fa-hien** visited Ceylon, stayed there for two years and returned about the year 413 A.D.⁵ He tells us that at his time there were five thousand monks in the **Abhayagiri-vihāra**.⁶ He describes the great ceremony of Tooth-worship and speaks of the Tooth being taken to **Abhayagiri**.⁷ He further tells us that there were only three thousand monks in the **Mahāvihāra** establishment.⁸ He also speaks of a King who built a new monastery.⁹

All this evidence goes to show that **Abhayagiri** was prosperous when Buddhaghosa went to Ceylon. He found the **Abhayagirivādins** in ascendancy. He may have had this book **Vimuttimagga** before him and it is not unlikely that he wanted to compose another book that would far outshine the **Vimuttimagga**. He does not make any direct reference to the **Abhayagirivādins**, probably because of contempt for his opponents and also because, as we have stated above, the **Abhayagirivādins** at that time were in great favour of the political power in Ceylon.

Now the questions that come next are: "Who is **Upatissa**? Where and when did he compose his book, **Vimuttimagga**? In what language did he write it? What can we know about him from it?"

1. E.R.E. i. p. 18.

2. Mv. XXXVII. pp. 1-16.

3. Identified with **Sirinivāsa** (referred to in the concluding stanzas of the **Samantapāsādikā**) by A. P. Buddhadatta in his Introduction (pp. iv-v) to his Sinhalese edition of **Vis.** (1914).

4. Mv. XXXVII. p. 212.

5. H. Parker, 'Ancient Ceylon', p. 301.

6. Travels of **Fahien**, transl. by James Legge, 1886, p. 102.

7. Ibid., p. 106.

8. Ibid., p. 107.

9. 'This King must be **Mahānāma**', Legge, p. 108

Indian
origin of
Vim.

To these questions unfortunately we cannot give very satisfactory answers. We can simply suggest certain probabilities. Beyond the bare mention of Upatissa by Dhammapāla, we have no other external evidence. From Dhammapāla's remarks in his commentary on the Visuddhimagga we can simply draw an inference that Upatissa's book was later accepted by the monks from the Abhayagiri school. We have already seen above¹ in the history of the Abhayagiri sect that many monks from India came and joined that sect. It is very likely that Vimuttimagga was one of the books brought over from India. From the internal evidence of the book we may say that there is no reference to any name² or place in Ceylon. We find in this book many words which are transliterations of Indian words. The list of worms residing in different parts of the body gives names which are transliterations of Indian names. These names must have been taken by Upatissa from some old work or works on medical science. Besides, the references to a *Candāla*, which we have already noticed, also point to the origin of the book in India,³ particularly, in South or Dravidian India where there is a very strong prejudice against *Candālas*.

My discovery of the Tibetan version⁴ of the third chapter on 'dhutas' is also important. The original of the Tibetan as well as the Chinese version seems to be the same. Wherever the Chinese text differs from the Pali text, the Tibetan also differs. It shows that the book did not disappear from India when its copy was taken out of India on way to China but it was studied in Buddhist schools of India at least till the eighth or ninth century A.D. when the Buddhist Pandits from India commenced to visit Tibet. The name of Vidyākaraprabha who is mentioned along with a Tibetan collaborator in the colophon of the Tibetan version is given by Shri Sarat Chandra Das in his 'Indian Pandits in the Land of Snow' pp. 49-50, among the names of those learned scholars who were invited by King Ral-pa-chan of Tibet in the ninth century. This Tibetan text provides an additional evidence to show the Indian origin of the book. It does not appear to be

1. p. lii.

2. Unless the name Nārada (p. 134) referred to any high personage from Ceylon, which seems to us to be very improbable.

3. Upatissa's change of the 'yellow' colour of the earth for 'kasīpa' (as said by B.) into 'black' (p. 43) may be considered as significant. Can it suggest the black soil of the country of origin of Upatissa?

4. See foot-note 1 on p. 16.

probable that a text from Ceylon was taken over to India and there it was studied in Buddhist schools and that it assumed such importance as to be translated, in part at least, in Tibetan.

As to the date of the composition of this book, our surmise is that this work seems to belong to a period not far later than the literary period of post-canonical Pāli Literature, when the Netti and the Peṭakopadesa—both of which are companion-volumes by Mahākaccāna—were composed. For, we find in the Vimuttimagga a number of passages¹ which closely agree with passages from the Peṭakopadesa and they have been given or indicated at different places in foot-notes. For instance, see a passage in the Introductory chapter (p. 2): *Dve hetū dve paccayā sāvakassa sammāditthiyā uppādāya: parato ca ghoso saccānusandhi ajjhattañ ca yoniso manasikāro.* Compare with this Vimuttimagga 1.2.6 從他聞.....自正念. Here we find that the words 自正念 exactly correspond to *ajjhattañ ca yoniso manasikāro*. The text of the Vimuttimagga is more akin to the text of the Peṭakopadesa than to the passage from M.i.294, A.i.87, which also we have given in the foot-note on p. 2. Hardy, editor of Netti, gives as the date of the composition of Netti 'about the beginning of our (Christian) era, or shortly later.'² Our book therefore, may be put somewhere in the first two centuries after the beginning of the Christian era.

There is one more point about which we cannot make any definite statement, namely the original language of the Vimuttimagga. Whether the text was originally in Pali or some Buddhist Sanskrit, (closely allied to Pali-Prakrit), like that of Divyāvadāna, Śikṣāsamuccaya, Lalitavistara or Mahāvastu, it is not possible to say with *certainty*. From a large number of Pali books quoted or used by the author, it may be inferred that Upatissa also wrote his book in Pali. We have indicated in the main part of this book how his passages correspond to passages from Pali literature, particularly the Nikāyas, Vibhanga and Paṭisambhidā. The Chinese transliterations also are not much helpful in enabling us to decide this point. For instance, although Jā-mo-thā-li, ām-lo, nā-yu-thā correspond respectively to Sanskrit Jamadagni, āmra, nayuta, the word *uppala* or *utpala* is found to be transliterated both by u-po-lo, u-to-lo, or to-lo as shown above (p. xlvi).

Probable date of Vim.

Language

1. For a collection of these passages, see Appendix A 3.

2. Netti, Introduction p. xxxii.

Personal information about Upa.

What we know of Upatissa from this book is very little. As we have noted above, he seems to be acquainted with Indian medical works. In addition to the list of worms in the different parts of the body, we find Upatissa going into the details of the development of the foetus from week to week. He also gives (7.17a.5-7) the names of several diseases—those of the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, head, heart, mouth, teeth, asthma, cold and fever (malaria), epileptic fits, fever leading to delirium, diseases of the skin like leprosy, boils or blisters, haemorrhage, intestinal and urinary diseases, etc. We may also recall the simile, which he has given (p. xxix) of a hot drink as being not salutary to a man who has the excess of bile in his humours. He has also illustrated the appropriateness of the order of the four Noble Truths by the simile of a physician who sees the symptoms of a disease, knows the cause of it and then prescribes an appropriate remedy for it.¹ Upatissa appears to be very harsh with an absolutely ignorant man. He would prescribe no *kammaṭṭhāna* for him but he asks him to stay with his teacher and develop the power of understanding.²

Several references to Sāriputta in this text make it clear that Sāriputta, the favourite disciple of the Buddha, could never be the author of this book. Also, Prof. Nagai's suggestion that Upatissa, who belonged to the line of the Theras in the first century A.D. in Ceylon, may have been the author of this book is not borne out by the internal evidence. We have already seen that there are no references to places in Ceylon and it may also be borne in mind that the author of this book reveals no special mastery of the Vinaya which is claimed by Prof. Nagai for that Upatissa who lived in the first century A.D. in Ceylon. So his theory will have to be rejected.

Here, some one may still say that Dhammapāla's testimony may not be considered as reliable unless it is corroborated by other evidence, and therefore the correspondence between our two texts can as well be explained on the supposition that when Buddhaghosa's work, the Visuddhimagga, came to be well-known, some one with leanings toward the Abhayagiri sect may as well have composed this book, Vimuttimagga.

To this we may reply that the whole of the internal evidence is *against* any supposition of that kind. Buddhaghosa's work

1. pp. xxviii, 110.

2. pp. 36, 41, 42.

decidedly appears to be an amplification of, and a great improvement upon, the bare old skeleton-like frame of the Vimuttimagga. For instance, we may here recall what we have already noted that Buddhaghosa, with the possible exception of one or two cases, gives a greater number of the categorical enumerations of the different technical or doctrinal points than Upatissa. Upatissa gives four categories of *sila* while B. gives five. Upatissa gives four ways of cultivating *ānāpānasati*, while Buddhaghosa gives eight. Upatissa gives ten kinds of *catudhātuvavatthāna*, while Buddhaghosa gives thirteen. In Upatissa, we find only six things mentioned that correspond to Buddhaghosa's *paṭibodhas*, while in the Visuddhimagga we have ten. Upatissa gives only four advantages of *saṃādhi*, while Buddhaghosa gives five. Upatissa mentions five kinds of *āhāre paṭikkūla-saññā*, while Buddhaghosa gives ten. And such examples could be multiplied.

Similarly we have noted that Upatissa's interpretations of some terms like *bhikkhu*, *Pātimokha*, *Dhamma*, *rūpasaññā*, *ākāsa*, *nibbāna*, etc. are simpler, more natural, devoid of scholastic artificiality and agree with older interpretations of canonical books. This clearly shows that Buddhaghosa's work marks a decidedly later stage than that of the Vimuttimagga.

Thus to conclude,

(i) from the internal evidence of the book, (a) which shows abundant similarities between the Vimuttimagga and the Visuddhimagga, (b) which shows that many of the untraced passages in the Visuddhimagga ascribed by Buddhaghosa to the *Porāṇas*, or to the *Āṭhakathās* are found in the Vimuttimagga, (c) which shows that the Vimuttimagga belongs to a school different from that of Buddhaghosa, and that it contains as many as nine passages giving the views that exactly tally with those ascribed by Buddhaghosa to 'some' ;

(ii) from the external evidence afforded by the *direct* testimony of Dhammapāla, who comments that in a particular place Buddhaghosa refers to Upatissa and his Vimuttimagga; and

(iii) from the general political and religious conditions in Ceylon, at the time of Buddhaghosa's visit to that country in the first quarter of the fifth century,

we think it *highly probable* that Buddhaghosa wrote his Visuddhimagga after the Vimuttimagga, and that very probably he had that book before him when he wrote his Visuddhimagga. We only say 'highly probable'. Because before the final

Conclusion.

decision can be given on this subject, we should like Dhammapāla's statement to be confirmed by some other evidence; and also the following points—which cannot be decided in the present state of our knowledge of the Buddhist and allied literatures—will first have to be cleared up:—

- (i) the source of the passages in the Vimuttimagga such as that which gives the names of worms in the human body, that which gives the development of the foetus from week to week;
- (ii) whether Sān-Tsāng 三藏 is the same as Petaka;
- (iii) the identification of Nieh-ti-li-po-tho-shiu-to-lo (涅底履波陀修多羅) with any known *sutta*.

Out of the four probable theories, that we suggested at the beginning of this introduction,¹ we have just shown that the second cannot be accepted. The third also is not acceptable because of the clear references in the Visuddhimagga to the views of other theorists, which we have shown, on the authority of Dhammapāla, to be the views of the Abhayagirivādins and which exactly tally with the views given in the Vimuttimagga. The fourth also cannot be accepted because we do not find any touches in the Vimuttimagga that are decidedly *purely* Mahāyānistic.² And so, the only theory, that seems to us as the most probable, is the theory no. 1:

That Buddhaghosa had Upatissa's book, Vimuttimagga, before him and that he, taking the frame work of Upatissa's Vimuttimagga, amplified it with his scholastic erudition and composed his work, Visuddhimagga, which has certainly far outshone Upatissa's Vimuttimagga.

* * * * *

The references in the Vimuttimagga are given to the handy and popular edition of the book, printed and published at Bi-ling 龜陵 in the province of Kiang-su 江蘇 in 1918. I have also occasionally given references to the Taisho edition of the Buddhist Chinese Tripitaka published under the direction of Prof. J. Takakusu and Prof. K. Wantanabe.

The text of the Vimuttimagga is given in volume No. 32 of this series, pp. 399-461 (no. 1648). I have also consulted,

1. pp. xvii-xviii.

2. The twelve dhutangas, ten Pāramitas, the Buddhadhammas mentioned by Upa. [see pp. 16, 64-65] agree with the Pāli tradition. They do not agree with the lists in the Mvy. 1128-39, 914-928, 135-53 and Chinese Dharmasangraha, XXXIV (pp. 31, 118), V (pp. 24, 121) and XLI (pp. 34, 119).

for checking up the different readings, the Tokio edition of the *Tripiṭaka*. The text of the *Vimuttimagga* is found in this series in case 24, Vol. III [藏三] pp. 22-74. The text of the *Visuddhimagga* that I have used is the one that has been edited by Henry Clark Warren and revised by Prof. Dharmānanda Kosambi. It is expected to be shortly published in the Harvard Oriental Series.

I cannot conclude this introduction without acknowledging my debt. I have to express my deep gratitude to Prof. K. T. Mei, who was teaching Chinese in Harvard University during my stay there (1929-32). He encouraged me in undertaking the study of Chinese, and but for his help it would have been impossible for me to accomplish anything in this line of research. I have also to express my debt to Prof. Dharmānanda Kosambi, my teacher, who first initiated me into the field of Buddhist studies, especially in Pāli Literature, for going over my first draft and making valuable suggestions. I have also to express my sincere thanks to Prof. Walter E. Clark and to the late Prof. J. H. Woods, of Harvard University—who alas! is no longer living—who looked over my work and made some useful suggestions when these pages were first being penned about five or six years ago. And last, but not least, I cannot forget my friends, Mr. Hideo Kishimoto¹ and Mr. J. R. Ware² who were of great help to me in checking references to Chinese books and discussing the interpretations of some knotty passages.

1. Now of the Imperial University, Tokio, Japan.

2. Now of the Chinese Department, Harvard University, Cambridge, Mass. U.S.A.

CHAPTER I

NIDANAM

Namo Tassa Bhagavato Arahato Sammāsambuddhassa

[Bk. 1.1.4-1.4.5; Tak. 399c-400 b. cf. Vis. I.1-15]

“*Sīla, Samādhi, Paññā* and *Anuttarā Vimutti*—these N.O. dhammas the illustrious Gotama understood in succession.”¹ With this introductory stanza, Upatissa (henceforth abbreviated as Upa.) commences his introductory chapter. He continues—

‘When a man has to reach the other shore, the *Nibbāna*, he has also to know the way that would enable him to reach that state. He must ask things about the *Sutta*, *Abhidhamma* and *Vinaya*. I must tell the way to Deliverance. Listen to me attentively.’

Upa. next gives us a brief comment on the introductory stanza given above. *Sīla* means *sīla-saṃvara*. *Samādhi* means *avikkhepa*. *Paññā* means *sambodhiñāṇa*. *Vimutti* means escaping from fetters. *Anuttarā* means *anāśavā*. He comments also on the other words in that stanza.

In continuation of the same, Upa. classifies *Vimutti* into five kinds:

(i) *Vikkhambhana-vimutti*: to check the *nīvaraṇas* XIII. 12 while practising the first trance.

(ii) *Tadanga-vimutti*: to be free from diṭṭhis while cultivating the *nibbedhabhāgiyasamādhi*.

(iii) *Samuccheda-vimutti*: to remove and destroy all kinds of ties or bonds.

(iv) *Paṭipassaddhi-vimutti*: to enjoy the *cittappassaddhi* at the time of the attainment of the fruit.

(v) *Nissaranya-vimutti*: *Anupādisesa-nibbāna*.

1. See A. ii. 2; D. ii. 123:

Sīlam samādhi paññā ca vimutti ca anuttarā anubuddhā ime dhammā Gotamena yasassindā.

'That by which one reaches Deliverance is the Path of Deliverance, the *Maggapati-padā*. And this way to Deliverance is accomplished with the help of *sīla*, *samādhi* and *paññā*. And I must tell this way.'

Upa. here goes on telling us why it is necessary to tell about the Path. Because, says he, there are some men who are 'with little dust' (*apparajakkha*) and who wish to attain Deliverance but if they do not know of this path, they are like blind men who wish to go far off to a distant country without any guide. These men will only suffer without reaching their goal. They wish to attain the Deliverance but they do not know the ways and means by which it could be attained. He gives another quotation in which the Blessed One is said to declare that there are two ways in which one can have *sammā-ditṭhi*, either by learning about it from others, or by proper reflection.¹ So, he says, he must speak about the Way to Deliverance (*Vimutti-magga*).

I. 10.

The *vikkhambhana-vimutti-magga* is fulfilled with the help of the three khandhas, *sīlakkhandha*, *samādhikhandha* and *paññākhandha*. He explains these terms, the first meaning *sammā-vācā*, *sammā-kammanta*, and *sammā-ājīva* and other things included with them; the second meaning *sammā-vāyāma*, *sammā-sati* and *sammā-samādhi* and other things included with them; and the last meaning *sammā-ditṭhi*, *sammā-sankappa* and other allied things. He gives also another alternative explanation. One must learn the three sikkhās, *adhisīla-sikkhā*, *adhicitta-sikkhā*, and *adhipaññā-sikkhā* which terms also are explained. By these sikkhās, the three visuddhis of *sīla*, *citta* and *ditṭhi* are accomplished which are no more than *sīla*, *samādhi* and *paññā*.

I. 11.

This *vikkhambhana-vimutti-magga* is *ādi-kalyāṇa*, *majjhaka-
lyāṇa* and *pariyosāna-kalyāṇa* in so far as the *sīla*, *samādhi* and *paññā*, which are the *ādi*, *majjhā* and *anta* of this Path, are *kalyāṇa*. By means of *sīla*, one removes desires and attachments, and finds delight in faultless pleasure. By *samādhi*, one removes self-torments and delights in *pīti* and

1. Cf. M. 294; A. i. 87(9): *Dve'me, bhikkhave, paccayā sammā-
ditṭhiyā uppādāya. Katame dve? Parato ca ghoso yoniso ca manasi-
kāro.* Also cf. the very opening words of the Peṭakopadesa: *Dve hetū dve
paccayā sāvakassa sammāditṭhiyā uppādāya: parato ca ghoso saccānu-
sandhi, ajjhattañ ca yoniso manasikāro.*

sukha. By *paññā*, one makes the *saccapariccheda* and attains the Middle Path, and is profoundly delighted in *Sambodhi*.

If the *sīla* is more intensely developed and the other two less, then one becomes *Sotāpanna* or *Sakadāgāmī*. If the *sīla* and *saṃādhi* are more developed, and *paññā* less, one becomes *Anāgāmī*. Practising all the three in their perfections, one becomes an *Arhat*, *anuttara-vimutta*.

CHAPTER II

SILA-PARICCHEDO

[Bk. 1.4.6-1.18.3 (end of the Bk.); Tak. 400c-404b. Cf. Vis. I.16—end of the First chapter.]

Upa. at the outset sets up questions which he takes one after another and explains them himself.

I. 17; diff. 1. *Kim sīlam?*

Cetanā-sīlam

Samvara-sīlam

Avitikkama-sīlam

[Cf. B.¹ I. 17 where we have a quotation from Ps. i. 44 which adds *cetasika-sīla* after the first of these sīlas. The explanation of these differs except in the last case where only it agrees:]

I. 140.
s.a.

In attempting to give another alternative explanation, Up. says: *pahānaṭṭhena samvaro; sabbe kusalā dhammā, idaṇi sīlam*. And in continuation of this he gives a long passage² from Ps. i. 46-47 which is also quoted in B.I. 140. The passage given by Upa. [1.4a.3-1.5.7; Tak. 400c. 8-26.] is only a part of that given by B. and it is substantially the same from *nekkhammena kāmacchandassa pahānam*—(sixth line in that para.) to *arahattamaggena sabbakilesānam pahānam sīlam, veramāṇi, cetanā, samvaro, avitikkamo sīlam* (fourth line from the bottom of that page), except that Upa. does not give, as far as can be judged from all the three editions of our Chinese text, any words corresponding to *paṭinissaggānupassanāya ādānassa*.

I. 20
q.d.

2. *Kim sīlassa lakkhaṇaṇi?*

To have *samvara* and to remove *asamvara*. Upa. goes into the details of what constitutes *asamvara*. He explains it as

1. Buddhaghosa. References are made to the chapter and paragraph of his *Visuddhimagga* (shortly to be published in the Harvard Oriental Series).

2. Ascribed by Upatissa to Abhidhamma.

violating the *Pātimokkhadhamma*, *paccayadhamma*, and *indriyadhamma*, which terms again he explains.

3-5. *Kāni rasa-paccupatṭhāna-padaṭṭhānāni?*

I. 21-22
diff.

Anavajja-sukham raso, anupāyāśo paccupatṭhānam, and sūcaritattaya-samācāro padaṭṭhānam. He also gives another alternative that *somanassa* is the *rasa*, *avippaṭisāra* *paccupatṭhāna*, and *indriya-gutti padaṭṭhāna*.

6. *Ko sīlassa ānisamso?*

Avippaṭisāro. And the same passage as is quoted in Vis. I. 23 I. 23 from A.v. 1 can be traced in a slightly abridged form. He also gives many other advantages that are included by B. in verses in I.24. This paragraph is concluded with the remark: *evam anantānisamṣam sīlam.*

7. *Kimatthām sīlam?*

I. 19
p.a.

Sītalatṭham,
Setṭhatṭham,
Sīlanatṭham,
Sabhāvatṭham,
Sukhadukkhabhāva-
sampayuttaṭṭham:

Cf. B.I. 19. This is much more detailed than B's. treatment. This gives many more atthas than those given by B.

and also :

Siratṭham
Sītalatṭham
Patitṭhatṭham

I. 19
refers to
the first
two

The first two of these are referred to by B. in 1.19 where he ascribes them to *aññe*. [Dhammapāla explains this word simply by *aññe* *ācariyā*.] Upa. explains these by giving very appropriate similes.

8. *Ācārassa (行) ca sīlassa ca kīm nānākaraṇam?*

N.C.

When a man works strenuously and resolves upon dhutas, it is *ācāra* and not *sīla*. *Sīla* is also named *ācāra* and *samvara* but acceptance (of dhutas) is *ācāra*.

I. 88

9. *Kati silāni?**Kusalam sīlam**Akusalam sīlam**Abyākataṃ sīlam*

These are explained as bodily and vocal activities, respectively meritorious, demeritorious and free from depravities (āsavas); good, bad and pure livelihood; and [activities] bearing good, bad and no fruition. [B. refers in I.38 to this classification given in Ps. i. 44, but rejects it.]

N.C.

10. *Kim-samuṭṭhānaṃ sīlam?*¹*Kusalacitta-samuṭṭhānaṃ kusalam sīlam.**Akusalacitta-samuṭṭhānaṃ akusalam sīlam.**Abyākatacitta-samuṭṭhānaṃ abyākataṃ sīlam.*

N.C.

11. *Kāni silassa ādi-majjha-pariyosānāni?**Samādānaṃ ādi, avitikkamo majjho, abhirati pari-yosānaṃ.*

N.C.

12-13. *Kati dhammā silassa antarāyikā? Kati silassa hetū?*

(i) *Catuttiṇsa dhammā maggassa antarāyikā: kodho, palāso, makkho, santāpo (熱),² macchariyam, issā, sāt̄heyyam (競), māyā, upanāho, 競 (rivalry), māno, atimāno, mado, pamādo, kossajjam, lobho, arati, ananvayañānam (不從智 not following wisdom),³ micchā sati, pāpikā vācā, pāpukā mittā, pāpakaṃ nānam, pāpikā ditṭhi, akkhanti, assaddhā, ahirikam, anottappam, kāyikavācasikabyāpāresu assādo (身口昧), itthijanechi sañvāso, satthu sikkhāya agāravo, indriyesu asaṇvāro, bhojane amattaññutā, paṭhamāya rattiya pacchimāya ca rattiya ajāgariyānuyogo,⁴ jhāna-sajjhāyānam abhāvo. Ime catuttiṇsa dhammā maggassa antarāyikā.*

1. Ps. i. 44, 45.

2. See Mvy. 4925, 4926 where the character used for *tāpana* is similar to this, though not identical. Also see Kimura, 'The Original and Developed Doctrines of Indian Buddhism (in Charts)', pp. 6, 18 and 39 where we do find the word *anutāpa* included among the kilesas.

3. Does this correspond to Vasubandhu's *asamprajanya* (see Trimśikā-Vijñāpti, p. 32) for which Suzuki reads 不正見? See D. T. Suzuki, Studies in Lankāvatāra Sūtra, p. 396.

4. See Kimura, *ibid.*, p. 39. It gives some terms which correspond to a few of these.

(ii) The opposites of these dhammas are the hetus of *sila*.

14. *Katividham sīlam? Duvidham, tividham, catubbidham.*

(A) *Katham duvidham?*

| | | | |
|------------------------------------|---|---|--|
| (i) <i>Cārīttam</i> | } | The explanation is substantially the same as is given in B.I. 26. | I. 26 |
| <i>Vārīttam</i> | | | I. 26 |
| (ii) <i>Hānabhāgīyam</i> : | } | able to destroy <i>dussila</i> . | I. 26 |
| <i>Pattibhāgīyam</i> : | | | able to attain all <i>kusala</i> dhammas and remove all kinds of <i>dussilas</i> . |
| (iii) <i>Lokiyam</i> | } | <i>Ariya-magga-phalehi adhigataṁ sīlam lokuttaram; sesam lokiyam.</i> | I. 32 |
| <i>Lokuttaram</i> | | | I. 32 |
| (iv) <i>Sappamāṇam</i> : | } | <i>Lokiye sile sampādite upasampanno hoti, lokuttare vimutto.</i> | I. 32 |
| <i>Appamāṇam</i> : | | | I. 32 |
| (v) <i>*Sapariyantam</i> | } | This substantially agrees with B.I. 31, giving the substance of the quotations in that paragraph from Ps. i. 43,44. | I. 31 |
| <i>Apariyantam</i> | | | I. 31 |
| (vi) <i>Nissitam</i> : | } | subdivided into three classes of <i>taṇhā</i> , <i>ditthi</i> and <i>māna</i> , of which only the first two correspond to B.I. 29, while the explanation of the third as given by Upa. is found in the first <i>tika</i> of <i>hīna</i> , <i>majjhima</i> and <i>pañīta</i> of B.I. 33. | I. 29 p.a. |
| <i>Anissitam</i> : | | | I. 29 p.a. |
| (vii) <i>Ādibrahmacariyakam</i> : | } | <i>sammā-kammanto, sammā-ājīvo, sammā-vāyāmo.</i> | I. 27 s.a. |
| <i>Khuddakānukhuddaka-sikkhā</i> : | | | I. 27 s.a. |
| (viii) <i>Citta-sampayuttam</i> : | } | <i>ādi-sikkhā-brahmacariyam.</i> | N.O. |
| <i>Citta-vippayuttam</i> : | | | N.O. |
| (ix) <i>Avātikkamasīlam</i> : | } | <i>sāvaka-sīlam.</i> | N.C. |
| <i>Visuddhisīlam</i> : | | | N.C. |

I. 30

(x) *Kāla-pariyantam¹**Āpānakotikam*

This corresponds to B's. classification of I. 30. The explanation generally agrees with that of B. Upa. adds that the fruit of the former takes time to mature while that of the latter is immediate (無時).

(B) *Katham tividham?*

(i) *Pāpa-nimmūlanena avitikkamo* (止惡不犯): To stop all evil; although [sīla] is not accepted, still he considers it to have been accepted and does not even think of transgression.

Samādānenā avitikkamo (受不犯). To accept [a vow of] non-transgression and so to abstain from transgression.

Samucchedanena avitikkamo (斷不犯): *Ariyo janāriyena maggena pāpahetū samucchindati.*

I. 35 s.d.

(ii) *Parāmatṭham*: *pubbevutta-saṭdisam sa-taṇhādiṭṭhikam.*

Aparāmatṭham: *puthujana-kalyāṇakassa sīlam, maggappattiyā sambhārabhūtam.*

Paṭippassaddham (畜奇)²: *Arahatta-sīlam.* [This last is slightly different from B.I. 35.]

I. 34 s.a.

(iii) *Loka-nissitam* *Atta-nissitam* *Dhamma-nissitam* S.a. with *attādhipateyya, lokādhipateyya, and dhammādhipateyya* in B.I. 34.

N.C.

(iv) *Visamam* [or, *micchā*] *pañihitam* (所願不等): to accept *sīla* to give trouble to others.

Samam (or *sammā*) *pañihitam* (所願等): to accept *sīla* for happiness in this life, as well as, for happiness of deliverance in the future.

Appañihitam (無所願): to accept *sīla* without regret (*avippatisāra*) and for the good of others.

1. Or, *Kālabhāgīyam* and *dehantikam*.

2. Taisho and Tokio editions.

(v) *Visuddham* } S.a. with B.I. 36 except that *Upa.* adds here one more case under the heading of *avissuddha*: *sañcicca āpattiyā āpajjanam*; *āpannāya āpattiyā avippaṭisāro*. He also remarks: *sace yogāvacarassa sīlam avisuddham hoti, gambhīro vippaṭisāro uppādetabbo; sace vematikam, āpannāpattiṁ jāneyya, iccassa phāsu bhavissati.* 1. 36 s.a.

Avisuddham

(vi) *Sekham*: *satta-sekha-jana-sīlam*. I. 37
Asekham: *Arahatta-sīlam*.
Neva sekham nāsekham: *puthujjana-sīlam*.

(vii) *Bhaya-sīlam*: through fear of wrong one does not N.O. commit evil.
Dukkha-sīlam: through sorrow, one does not commit any evil.
Moha-sīlam: *go-sīla* or *kukkura-sīla* which one accepts. In that case he becomes a bull or a dog, or otherwise he falls into a hell.¹

(viii) *Hīnam*: tainted by grosser taints and soiled by discontent (*asantuṭṭhi*).
Majjhimaṇam: tainted by smaller taints and associated with *santuṭṭhi*.
Pañitaṇam: not tainted by anything and associated with *santuṭṭhi*.
Upa. adds that the fulfilment of the first conduces to the enjoyment of human pleasures, that of the second to the enjoyment of heavenly pleasures, and that of the last to the attainment of *vimutti*.

(C) *Catubbidham* [Cf. B.I.39 which differs in many respects from this.]

(i) *Hānabhāgiyam*: *maggassa antarāye na vinodeti*, I. 39 diff. *utṭhānabantehi jānehi apakkamatī, sañcicca āpattiṁ āpajjati, āpattiṁ āpanno paṭigūhati, paṭicchādeti.*

1. Cf. M. i. pp. 388-89.

Thitibhāgiyām: sampādite sīlē appamatto hoti, upasamadassanām pana na uppādeti.

Visesabhāgiyām: paripūrita-sīla-samādhīsu appamatto hoti, upasamadassanām pana na uppādeti.

Nibbedhabhāgiyām: paripūrita-sīla-samādhīsu appamatto hoti, upasamadassanena ca nibbedhabhāgiyo hoti.

I. 40 (ii) *Bhikkhu-sīlam*
Bhikkhunī-sīlam
Anupasampanna-sīlam
Odāta-vasana-sīlam.

The same as in B. I. 40. where B. gives *gahaṭṭha-sīla* which corresponds to the last expression here.

I. 41 s.a. (iii) *Pakati-sīlam*
Ācāra-sīlam
Dhammatā-sīlam
Pubbahetu-sīlam

S. a. with B. I. 41.

N.O. (iv) *Sīla-sīlam:*
kusala-sīlam, akusala-sīlam.

Samudaya-sīlam:

kusala-citta-samuṭṭhānaṁ kusala-sīlam, akusala-citta-samuṭṭhānaṁ akusala-sīlam.

Nirodha-sīlam:

kusala-sīlānuppattiya akusala-sīlassa vūpāsamo; Arahattūpapattiya kusala-sīlassa vūpāsamo.

Nirodha-magga-paṭipadā-sīlam: cattāro sammapappadhānā. When thus classified these four should be considered as *sīla* and not *vāyāmas*.

I. 42-52 (v) (a) *Pātimokkha-samvara-sīlam* [B. I. 42-52.] Like B., Upa. gives the following passage from Vbh. 244 to explain this *sīla*:

Idha bhikkhu pātimokkha-samvara-samvuto viharati ācāra-gocara-sampanno anumattesu vajjesu bhayadassāvī, samādāya sikkhati sikkhāpadesu.

Upa., like B., comments on this whole passage. [It is worth noting how his comment differs from that of B. as well as from that in Vibhanga 245-248]

Ldhā ti imasmiñ satthu-sāsane [lit. °*dhamme*].

Bhikkhū ti puthujjana-kalyāñako; api ca sekho, I. 43 diff. asekho, āneñjadhammo.¹

Pātimokkhan ti sīlam, patiññhā, ādi, carañam, sañyamo, sañvaro, mokkho,² anibandho, pamukham kusalānam dhammānam samāpattiya.

[It should be noted that the comment in Vbh. p. 246 on this passage is exactly the same except that there is no word corresponding to *anibandho*. Vis. I. 43 gives a comment which is quite different.]

Sañvaro ti kāyika-vācasika-kammassa avitikkamo.

Sañvuto ti Pātimokkha-sañvarena upeto.

, Viharati ti catu³-sañvarena sañvuto.

Ācāra-gocara-sampanno. The comment on these words I. 44-51 substantially agrees with that given by B. I.44-51 in the quotations from Vibhanga 246-47.

Añumattesu vajjesu bhayadassāvī. The comment I. 52 on this agrees with that of B.1.52.

Samādāya sikkhati sikkhāpadesu.

Kāni sikkhāpadānī ti vuccanti? Sattappabhedo⁴ sañvaro.

(b) *Ājīva-pārisuddhi-sīlam:* *micchājīvena avitikkamo.*
Katamo micchājīvo?

1. That is how I should like to emend the punctuation, taking this expression with what precedes rather than with what follows. For the expression *bhikkhu āneñjappatto* see A. ii. 184.

2. Vibhanga reads *mukham* but in the footnote gives a variant *mokham*.

3. Which four?

4. Does this refer to the seven classes of the rules of Vinaya, namely, *pārājikā, sañghādisesa, aniyata, nissaggiya-pācittiya* and *pācittiya* (treated as one class) *pātidesanīya, sekhiya* and *adhikarāna-samatha?* Or, does it refer to the abstinence from the seven āpattiikkhandhas, detailed in DhsA. p. 394 as follows: *Pārājikam, sañghādisesam, thullaccayanam, pācittiyanam, pātidesanīyanam, dukkaṭam, dubbhāsitan ti satta āpattiyo?*

I. 67-70
r.a.

Kuhanā (解 息)¹ of three kinds: *paccaya-paṭisevana-vasena*, *iriyāpathavasena*, *sāmantajappanavasena* [Roughly gives the substance of B.1.67-70].

I. 62-65
r.a.

Lapanā
Nemittikatā
Nippesikatā
Lābhena lābhām
nijigīṣsanatā

} This roughly agrees with B.1.62-65.

Api ca, micchājīvo ti

I. 44

*veludānam vā pattadānam vā puppha-phala-sinānā-dantakaṭhadānam*² [cf. B. I.44] and a list of other different kinds of *micchājīva*, summarising the list in D.I.9. of words such as *angam*, *nimittam*, *uppādam*, etc. partly quoted by B. in I. 83. Upa. concludes: *eramādiko nānāvidho micchājīvo. Micchājīvā paṭiviratī ti pārisuddhi-silam.*

I. 53-58
q.d.

(c) *Indriya-saṃvara-silam*. Upa. explains this in a way which agrees with what B. explains in brief in I.59. But the detailed explanation which is given by B. in I.53-58 is quite different from that of Upa. who gives nine ways—some of which are not quite clear—in which this *indriya-saṃvara* can be accomplished.

(d) *Catuppaccaya-sannissita-silam*: *atṭhahi ākārchi paṭi-sankhā yoniso piṇḍapātam paṭisevati*—

1. *neva davāya, na madāya,*
2. *na maṇḍanāya na vibhūsanāya,*
3. *yāvadeva imassa kāyassa ṭhitiyā, yāpanāya,*
4. *jighacchā-pipāsānam uparatiyā* (corresponds to B.'s *vihimūparatiyā* I.92),
5. *brahmačariyānuggahāya,*
6. *iti purāṇa ca vedanām paṭihankhāmi, navañ ca vedanām na uppādēssāmi,*
7. *yātrā ca me bhavissati,*
8. *anavajjatā ca phāsuvihāro cā ti.*

This whole passage is commented upon. The comment agrees with the general spirit of the comment of B. (I.89-94) though it is not without variations in detail.

1. Ordinarily this word means *kosajja* or *thīnamiddha*; but there is no doubt that what is intended here is *kuhandā*.

2. Cf. Miln. 369-70; Maung-Tin, Expositor, i. 201.

These eight ways can be reduced to four paccavekkhaṇas: N.C.

1. *pahātabba-paccavekkhaṇā*, covering the first two of the eight ways mentioned above;
2. . *paccaya* (事)-*paccavekkhaṇā*, covering the third, fourth and fifth;
3. *yātrā* (自安)-*paccavekkhaṇā*, covering the sixth and seventh;
4. *parittānisamsa-paccavekkhaṇā*, covering the last.

These four paccavekkhaṇas can further be reduced to three: *antadvaya-pārivajjanam*, *majjhimāya ca pātipadāya sevanam*.

Upa. explains these terms and in continuation of the same, he gives the passage: *paṭisankhā yoniso cīvaraṁ paṭisevati, yāvadeva sītassa paṭighātāya, uṇhassa paṭighātāya, dāmṣa-makasa-vātātapa-sirīmṣapa-samphassānam paṭighātāya, yāvadeva hiri-kopīna-pāticchādanttham*. B. has given the comment on this passage in I. 85-88.

In the same way regarding the acceptance of medical requisites. While begging his food or taking his medicine or using his clothes or bedding, the mendicant should reflect, from day to day, and from time to time, that he depends upon others for these things.

The former teachers have said of the four kinds of paribhogas:

[Cf. B.I. 125 where we have the same four kinds, although their explanation differs considerably.]

I. 125
but diff.
explan-
ation.

Theyya-paribhogo: dussilassa paribhogo.

Inaparibhogo: ahirikassa anottappassa micchā-jivikassa paribhogo.

Dāyajja-paribhogo: ātāpissa (or utthānavato purisassa) paribhogo.

Sāmi-paribhogo: ariyānam paribhogo. [Cf. B.I. 125-127.]

There are also two kinds of paribhogas:

aparisuddha: sa-hirottappassa apaccavekkhitvā paribhogo.

parisuddha: sa-hirottappassa mattaññuno pāpakesu cittuppādesu nibbindant-tassa.

Upa. remarks about all the four kinds of *sīlas*,¹ mentioned in the fourfold division in this way :

I. 98,100,
111, 123

Vinaya-saṃvara-sīlam (substituted for *pātimokkha-saṃvara* mentioned above) *adhimattāya saddhāya paripūritam hoti*, *ājīva-pārisuddhi-sīlam adhimattena viriyena paripūritam hoti*, *indriya-saṃvara-sīlam adhimattāya saddhāya (?) satiyā*² *paripūritam hoti*, *paccaya-sevana-sīlam adhimattāya paññāya paripūritam hoti*.

Upa. next tells us how *ājīva-pārisuddhi* follows *Vinaya-saṃvara* and how these two in turn follow *indriya-saṃvara*. *Paccaya-sannissita-sīla* is the same as *indriya-saṃvara-sīla*. He again tells us that *Vinaya-saṃvara* and *ājīva-pārisuddhi* are included under *silakkhandha*; *indriya-saṃvara* and *Vinaya-saṃvara* under *samādhikkhandha*; and *catupaccaya-sannissita-sīla* under *paññākhandha*.

15. *Kathām sīla-visuddhi samādinnā hoti?*

When a *bhikkhu* has first accepted the *jhānadhammas*, he should reflect whether he has in himself any of the seven kinds of (lapses).³ If he sees in himself any *Pārājikā* offence, he is fallen from *bhikkhu-dhamma* and he stays only in *anupasampanna-sīla*.

Former teachers have said, "If he sees that he has transgressed into a *Sanghādisesa* offence, he should ask pardon by a *Sangha-kamma* (衆事). If he has transgressed other offences he should get himself pardoned by another man. If he finds that he has transgressed into a *micchājīva*, he should get a pardon appropriate to the case. Thus he should repent: 'I shall not do it again.' [Cf. B. I. 126, 'na puna evaṇi karissāmī ti.'] He resolves not to make any further transgression. By this *sīla-visuddhi*, he does good actions again and again, removes evil, and every morning and evening resolves upon the purity of conduct.

1. It should be noted that Upa. gives no fivefold division as B. gives in I. 131-142.

2. Apparently there seems to be some inaccuracy in this reading of the word *saddhā* where we should expect *sati* (捨) but all the three editions I have consulted read in the same way. Cf. B. I. 100.

3. See note 2 on p. 11.

16. *Kati sīlassa* (or rather 行 ācārassa)¹ *patiṭṭhā*? *Dve* I. 153 diff.
sīlassa patiṭṭhā:

- (i) *dussīlassa ādīnavadassanam*,
- (ii) *sīlassa ānisamṣa-dassanam*.

The explanation shows that it corresponds to B.'s *sīlavipatiyā ādīnavadassanam* and *sīla-sampattiya ānisamṣa-dassanam* (I.153) but the detailed enumeration shows that it is not altogether the same.

In the various illustrations of the disadvantages of a man of evil conduct, he gives two similes. He compares this man to a thief in prison who finds no delight in noble things and to a *Candāla* who finds no pleasure in a princely throne.²

One must guard one's *sīla* with utmost care, as an ant does its eggs, or a *camarī* its tail, or a person his only son, or his single eye,³ or as a magician his body, or a poor man his treasure or a sailor his ship.

All the ways of guarding his *sīla* are taken recourse to by him. Thus it becomes *patiṭṭhā* for *jhāna-samāpatti*.

1. Obviously used in the same sense as *sīla*. See p. 5 para. 8 above.

2. Cf. Vis. I. 154, *nirāso saddhamme caṇḍālakumāro viya rajje*.

3. Cf. Vis I. 98, the first two lines of the stanza:

*Kikī va aṇḍam camarī va vāladhīm
 piyam va puttūm nayanam va ekakaṇ.*

CHAPTER III

DHUTANI¹

[Bk. 2.1.4-2.9a.4; Tak. 404b-406c. Cf. Vis. IIInd chapter.]

The introductory paragraph telling us why the *yogāvacara*, after fulfilling the purity of conduct, turns to the 'dhutas' corresponds roughly to B.II.1. Then Upa. tells us that there are thirteen² dhutas classified as follows:

II. 88 *Dve dhammā cīvara-paṭisamyuttā: paṭsukūlikam, tecīvari-
kam;*
*pañca dhammā piṇḍpāta-paṭisamyuttā: piṇḍpātikam,
sapadānacārikam, ekāsanabhojanam (B.'s 'ekāsanikam'),
bhojane mattaññutā³ (B.'s patta-piṇḍikam), khalu-
pacchābhattiakañ ca.*
*pañca dhammā senāsana-paṭisamyuttā: āraññikam, rukkha-
mūlikam, abbhokāsikam, sosānikam, yathāsanthati-
kañ ca.*
ekañ viriya-paṭisamyuttam: nesajjikam.

[This corresponds to B.II.88, where we find exactly this same classification.]

Upa. next tells us how each of these dhutas is accepted, although, later also, he tells us the same thing in his treatment of each of the dhutas.

1. On this subject see my article 'A fragment of a Tibetan Version of a Lost Indian Work' published in the Proceedings Vol. (pp. 131-135) of the Seventh All-India Oriental Conference, Baroda (1933).

2. Mvy.1128-1139 and Chin. Dhs. XXXIV (pp. 31, 118) give a list of twelve dhutangas only. The list in one does not, however, agree with that in the other. The former, as well as Puggala-paññatti (p. 69), omits *sapadānacārikanga* and *pattapindikanga* (or *bhojane mattaññutā* of *Vimuttimagga*) while the latter omits *yathāsanthatikanga* and *pattapindikanga* from the list of B., but both these texts give a new anga, called *nāmatika* or *nāmatika* for *pattapindika* of B. For the word *namata* (or *nāmatika* or *nāmantika*) see *Cullavagga* of V. 11, 1; 19, 1; 27, 1; X. 10, 4; Vin. Comm. explains it as *sattha-vethanakam, pilotikakhandam*. Also see B.D. pp. 135-36 and the Tibetan Dictionary by S. C. Das, p. 836 under *phyiñ-pa* ལྔ-པ. *Namata* is felt and *nāmatikanga* is the practice of wearing felt. It should also be noted that the characters used in the Chin. Dhs. differ widely from those used in our text.

3. This term is found in the Tibetan version also. See p. 133 of my article referred to above.

1. *Kimatthañ pamsukūlam samādiyati?*

He sees disadvantages in seeking his clothing from householders and sees advantages in the acceptance of this practice, which he does by thinking in this way: *gahapati-dānassa pañikkhittattā pamsukūlam samādiyāmi.*

Ko ānisamso pamsukūla-samādāne?

The answer roughly corresponds to B.II.21 and some expressions like *corabhayena abhayatā*, *paribhoga-taṇhāya-abhāvo* can be traced. There are some additions by Upa. like *diṭṭha-dhamma-sukha-vihāritā* and so on.

Katividhañ pamsukūlam? Of two kinds:

- (i) that which is not owned by any one such as *sosānikam*, *sankāracolañ*, *pāpanikam*, *rathiyā-coṇakam*, and a *cīvara* made of clippings picked up, washed, dyed and sewn together.
- (ii) things left over by common people such as clippings of a tailor, pieces eaten up by cattle or mice, (partly) burnt by fire, thrown away by people, coverings over a corpse, or garments of heretics and so on.

Katham samādiyati?

Sace bhikkhu gahapati-dānam pañikkhipati, tena pamsukūlikam hoti.

Katham bhedo?

Sace bhikkhu gahapatidānam samādiyati, tena pamsukūlikam bhinnam hoti.

2. *Katham tecīvarikam samādiyati?*

If he has an additional *cīvara*, he should give it to others, should see *ādīnava* in keeping it and should see the advantage in possessing only the three *cīvaras*. He should think: *ajjatage atireka-cīvarassa pañikkhittattā tecīvarikan samādiyāmi.*

Ko ānisamso tecīvarika-samādāne?

The answer roughly agrees with B.II.25 some of the expressions from which can be traced here such as *appasamāram-bhatā, santuṭṭho kāya-parihārikena.*

Kāni tīṇi cīvarāni? Sanghāti, Uttarāsangam, Antarāvāsakañ ca. [These names are given in their Chinese transliterations.]

Katham samādānam? Sace bhikkhu atireka-cīvaram na dhāreti.

Katham bhedo? Sace bhikkhu catuttham cīvaram samādiyati.

II. 21
r.a.II. 15
p.a.II. 25
r.a.

3. *Katham piṇḍapātikam samādinnam hoti?*

The *yogāvacara* should see the disadvantages in this that if he accept invitations, it would interfere with his work and that he would come into contact with undesirable bhikkhus. Further he should see the advantages, and resolve: *ajjatagge nimantana-paṭikkhepena piṇḍapātika-dhammam samādiyāmi.*

II. 29
r.a.

Ko piṇḍapātikassa ānisamso? The answer roughly corresponds to B.II.29. While some expressions from B. like *kosajjanimmathanatā, mānappahānam, rasatañhānivāraṇam* can clearly be seen, there are others like *cātuddisatā* (於四方) added. [B. gives this last as one of the advantages of *abbhokāsi-kangam*, II.62.]

*Katividhā nimantana?**Katham samādānam?**Katham bhedo?*

Upa. mentions three kinds of *nimantana*¹—for food, for going and for meeting—and adds that this practice is accepted by avoiding invitations and violated by accepting them.

4. *Katham sapadānacārikam samādinnam hoti?*

If he gets excellent food in the houses he visits, he does not go again. He is away from doubtful places (*sankitaṭhānāni*). He knows their faults. He also knows the advantages of resolving: *ajjatagge a-sapadānacārikam paṭikkhipāmi, sapadānacārikam samādiyāmi.*

II. 33
r.a.

Ko ānisamso sapadānacārike? The answer corresponds to B. II.33 from which the expressions like *avhānānabhinandanā, candūpamatā* can be traced here. Upa. also adds many others.

*Kiñ nāma sapadāna-cārikam?**Katham samādānam?**Katham bhedo?*

When a *bhikkhu* enters a village for alms, he starts from a house on the extreme border. If he goes from house to house, he fulfills this practice; but if he passes over one house and goes to another, he violates it.

1. Cf. SN. 40 *Āmantanā hoti sahāya-majjhe, vāse ṭhāne gamane cārikāya.*

5. *Katham ekāsanikam samādiyati?*

Ekāsanika means to be far from taking food at each meal at two or more different places. This is practised by good men and is something about which there cannot be any doubt (無疑).

Ko ānisamso ekāsanike? The answer roughly corresponds II. 37 to B.II.37, some expressions from which like *appābādhata*, *appātānkata*.....*phāsu-vihāro* can be traced here.

Katham ekāsanikassa samādānam? Upa. speaks of the three pariyantas, *āsanapariyanta*, *udakapariyanta* and *bhojana-pariyanta* mentioned by B. in II.36. If he II. 36

Ke pariyyantā?

plans to sit twice for food, he violates *eka-bhojana* (一食) which with the exception of liquid medicines is commended by the Buddha. [Cf. B. II. 36, *Sace manussā*.....*sappimāṇḍāni āharanti*, *bhesajjamattam eva vatṭati*.]

Katham bhedo?

6. *Katham bhojana-mattaññutā* (受節量食) *samādiyati?* II. 39
[Diff. from *pattapīṇḍikangam* of B.II.39ff.] diff.

If he eats and drinks without moderation, he increases his bodily sloth and heaviness, always has greed, and never feels satisfied in his stomach. He knows the disadvantages of this and further knows the advantage of moderation in food which he takes with this resolve: *ajjatagge loluppaṁ paṭikkhipitvā bhojana-mattaññutam samādiyāmi*.

Ko ānisamso bhojana-mattaññutāya? [The answer differs II. 41 from B.II.41.] diff.

Moderation in food, not to allow the stomach to indulge in [desires for food]—for, eating too much increases diseases and gives no happiness—removes sloth (*thīnamiddha-paṇūḍanam*) and is recommended by good people.

Katham samādānam? When he takes his food and drink he must know how much he needs, and must not take more than an average standard. He must cut off lack of moderation. Otherwise, the practice of this *dhutanga* is violated.

Katham bhedo?

7. *Katham khalupacchābhāttikam samādiyati?*

He cuts off all expectations and is far from *atirittabhojana*. He knows the disadvantages of this and also sees the advantages of a resolve like this: *ajjatagge atiritta-bhojanam paṭikkhipāmi, khalu-pacchā-bhāttikam samādiyāmi*.

II. 45
p.a.

Ko ānisamso khalu-pacchā-bhāttike?

The answer partly corresponds to B. II. 45, from which *pariyesanāya abhāvo* can be traced here.

Duvīdham [khalu-pacchā-bhāttikam] :

aparicchinnāntam (? 不節邊)—If he receives additional food or gets it by a separate apology he should not eat it again. [Does this correspond to B. II. 43: *parāretvā puna bhojanam kappiyam kāretvā na bhuñjitab-
lam?*]

adhiṭṭhitāntam (受持邊)—When he has taken twenty-one mouthfuls (kabalas) he should not take any more.

Katham samādānam? } When a mendicant is a *khalu-pacchābhāttika*, he cuts off *atirittabhojana*; so, if he takes the latter, he violates the practice.
Katham bhedo? }

8. *Katham āraññikam samādiyati?*

He sees the disadvantages of dwelling in a noisy place, where his mind comes into contact with five kinds of impurities (lit. dust 霾 *raja*) and produces *sankiliṭṭhasukha*. If he lives in a noisy place, he is disturbed by the people coming and going. Further he sees the advantages in the practices of an *āraññika*, when he resolves: *ajjatagge gāmantavihāram paṭikkhipāmi, āraññikam samādiyāmi*.

II. 49
r.a.

Ko arāññassa paccanto? The answer roughly corresponds to B. II. 49: *pañcadhanusatikam pacchimam*.

Katham samādānam? By giving up *gāma-majjhe vihāra*.

Katham bhedo? By resorting to *gāma-majjhe vihāra*.

9. *Katham rukkhamūlikam samādiyati?*

He abandons a covered place (*channam*), does not accumulate or store up, removes *taṇhā* or *pariyesanā*, and knows their disadvantages. He also sees the advantages of a *rukkhāmūlika* and resolves: *ajjatagge channam paṭikkhipāmi, rukkha-mūla-vihāram samādiyāmi*.

Ko ānisamso rukkhmūlike?

The answer corresponds to B.II.58, some expressions from which like *senāsana-macchera-kammārāmatānam abhāvo, devatāhi suhavāsitā* can be found here. II. 58
r.a.

Ke rukkhā sevitabbā? Such trees should be used, that by day time, the shadows of the trees may reach the place occupied by him and such trees as would not shed leaves on his place when it is windy.

Ke rukkhā na sevitabbā? One must keep away from dangerous, decayed trees, trees, hollow or eaten up by worms, or trees resorted to by demons or spirits. Cf. B.II.56, where B. enlists different kinds of trees to be avoided wherein he mentions *cetiyarukkha*. II. 56

Katham samādānam? By avoiding covered places.

Katham bhedo? If he stays in covered places, he breaks the practice.

10. *Katham abbhokāsikam samādiyati?*

He does not like a place with a roof on, nor does he like to sit under a tree, nor does he like a place where things are stored up. He knows the disadvantages of these and further sees the advantages of an *abbhokāsika*. He thinks: *ajjatagge nivāsam na sādiyāmi, paṭikkhipāmi, abbhokāsikam samādiyāmi*.

Ko ānisamso abbhokāsikassa?

The answer partly corresponds to B. II. 62, some of the expressions from which like *thīna-middha-panūdanam, migā viya, nissangatā* etc. can be traced here. II. 62
p.a.

Katham samādānam? By resolving: *channañ ca rukkhamūluñ ca paṭikkhipāmi, abbhokāsikañ ca samādiyāmi*.

Katham bhedo? If he stays in a covered place, or under a tree, he violates the practice.

11. *Katham sosānikam samādiyati?*

If he resorts very little to places other than *susāna*, then there is little *pamāda*, and he becomes afraid of evil (*pāpa*). He knows the disadvantages of resorting to places other than *susāna*, and the advantage of being a *sosānika*. He thinks: *ajjatagge na-susānam paṭikkhipāmi, sosānikam samādiyāmi*.

Ko ānisamso sosānikassa samādāne?

The answer to this roughly corresponds to B.II.67, several expressions from which can be traced here. For instance, we have *maraṇa-satiyā paṭilābho, appamāda-vihāritā, kāmarāga-vinodanam, amanussānam garubhāvanīyatā*. II. 67
r.a.

Katham̄ sosānikam̄ samādinnam̄ hoti? Kattha vasitabbam̄?

When he goes to a cemetery, he must first note the places where there is constant crying, or constant smoke, or constant fire, and if he wants to stay in the cemetery, he must stay in places other than these.

Katham̄ samācaritabbam̄? When a *bhikkhu* stays there, he must not build there any room, nor make any bed, nor should he stay in a place in the direction from which the wind blows, nor in a place against the current of the wind. [There are some details in this connection, which are not found in B.]

Katham̄ samādānam̄? By abandoning places other than *susāna*.

Katham̄ bhedo? By living in places other than *susāna*.

12. *Katham̄ yathā-santhatikam̄ samādiyati?*

He rejoices not in what people are greedy for, and does not bother others so as to make people avoid him. He knows the defects of this kind of life and sees the advantages of a *yathā-santhatika*. [He resolves] : *ajjatagge senāsana-loluppam̄ paṭik-khipāmi, yathā-santhatikam̄ samādiyāmi*.

II. 71
diff.

Ko ānisam̄so yathāsanthatike? [The answer differs considerably from B.II.71.] One seeks contentment about a dwelling-place, loves a solitary place, cuts off delight in the acceptance of many things, is highly respected by people and so on.

Katham̄ samādānam̄? By removing greed for a dwelling place.

Katham̄ bhedo? By resorting to a comfortable place.

13. *Katham̄ nesajjikam̄ samādiyati?*

By knowing the disadvantages of drowsiness and sleep, and knowing the advantages of being a *nesajjika*. He thinks: *ajjatagge seyyam̄ paṭikkhipāmi, nesajjikam̄ samādiyāmi*.

II.75
diff.

Ko ānisam̄so nesajjike? [The answer differs from B.II.75.] He cuts off sloth, removes bodily illness, is away from passionate contact, delights in diminishing sleep, has constant solitariness and quiet, and is able to produce *jhāna-visesa*.

Katham̄ samādānam̄? By cutting off sleep.

Katham̄ bhedo? If he sleeps, he would be violating the practice.

Now follows a small section on 方便 which purports to enumerate cases of convenience or emergency, when a certain laxity in the observance of these practices may be allowed; as for instance, he may take some extra pieces of cloth as towels, or for bandages of wounds; or, even if he has taken up the practice of a *sapadānacārika*, he should avoid elephants or horses that may be coming in his way. Seeing a *caṇḍāla*, he should cover his begging-bowl. 'Following one's ācariya or *upajjhāya*' is also mentioned as an occasion for exception. He may get up from the place where he is taking his food, when he sees his teacher coming or any guest-mendicants coming, although he has taken up the practice of taking food on one and the same seat only. [B. also has referred to such cases from time to time. See, for instance, II.31,35.]

Under these circumstances, even though these practices are violated, no sin of violation is attached. But no exception is allowed in the cases of a *bhojana-mattaññū* and a *khalupacchābhāttika*.¹ Also in the case of a *nesajjika*; although some say that, in this case, an exception may be allowed when a mendicant N.C. has to get up from his seat for clearing his nose.

Upa. next tells us how these dhutas can be condensed in- II. 87 diff.
to just eight. *Khalupacchābhāttikatā* includes *bhojana-mattaññū* and *ekāsanikatā*, while the practice of an *āraññika* includes the practices of a *rukha-mūlika*, *abbhokāsika* and *sosānika*. [It should be noted that the details regarding this as given by B. in II.87 are different.] Upa. supports this statement by a quotation from what he calls the *Abhidhamma*.

These eight can further be reduced to three: the practices of an *āraññika*, *pañsukūlika*, and *piñḍapātika*.

Upa. discusses the following questions regarding the dhutas in general:

(i) *Kena vuttāni dhutangāni?*

Terasa dhutāni Bhagavatā vuttāni, Bhagavatā paññattā-ni. In continuation of this, Upa. says that we cannot call these dhutas *kusala*, or *akusala*, or *abyākata*. For it is possible for a person of evil disposition not to give up evil thought or evil desires and to produce adhammas and so it will be seen that the dhutangas may not be *kusala*. Now in Vis. II. 78, 79, B. combats the views of those who say (i) that the dhutangas can

II. 78
combats
this view

be called *kusala*, *akusala* or *abyākata*; or (ii) that they are *kusalattikaviniñmutta*. Upatissa's view seems to be identical with the latter, which, says Dhammapāla the Commentator, was the view of the adherents of the school of Abhayagiri. [*Abhayagirivāsike sandhāyāha. Te hi dhutangam paññattīti vadanti.*]¹

II. 83-84

(ii) *Dhutassa katividhā dhammā?*

Dve dhammā: alobho ca amoho ca. This agrees with B. II. 83, 84. Upa. also gives the quotation from A. iii. 219 in a slightly varied form, while it is merely referred to by B.

(iii) *Rāgādicaritesu ko dhutam sevati?*

Rāgacarito ca moha-carito ca. Upa. definitely says that the practice of dhutas is not helpful to a *dosa-carita*. It is positively harmful to him just as a hot drink is harmful to a man who is suffering from the illness of fever. But he also refers to an alternative view that the practices of an *āraññika* and *rukka-mūlika* are appropriate for a *dosa-carita*, which B. also has mentioned in II. 86 as an alternative view: *āraññikanga-rukkha-mūli-kangapatiṣevanā vā dosacaritassāpi sappāyā*.

N.O.

(iv) *Kati dhutāni kāla-pariyantāni?*

The three dhutas, those of a *rukka-mūlika*, *abbhokāsika* and *sosānika*, are restricted to eight months. The Buddha has allowed a sheltered place for the time [of the rainy season] when a place of safety is required.

II. 81-82

(v) *Ko dhuto ca dhutavādo ca?:* [Cf. B. II.81-82 where the explanations are quite different.]²

- (a) *Dhuto ca dhuta-vādo ca: Arahā ca dhuta-samannāgato ca.*
- (b) *Dhuto ca na dhuta-vādo ca: Arahā, dhutanga-samādānena pana na samannāgato.*
- (c) *Na dhuto ca dhuta-vādo ca: sekho ca puthujjano ca dhutasamādānena samannāgato.*

1. See pp. 38-39 of my article 'Vimuttimagga and the School of Abhayagirivihāra in Ceylon', printed in the Journal of the University of Bombay, Vol. V, part III, Nov. 1936, pp. 35-40.

2. On the subject-matter of this paragraph as well as of the chapter, also see my article 'Dhutāṅgas' in the Indian Historical Quarterly, March 1937, Vol. XIII, no. 1, pp. 44-51.

(d) *Na dhuto ca na dhuta-vādo ca: sekho ca puthujjano ca dhuta-samādānena na saman-nāgato.*¹

Dhutāni kiñ-lakkhaṇāni, kiñ-rasāni, kiñ-paccupaṭṭhā-nāni?

Appicchatā-lakkhaṇāni, santuṭṭhi-rasāni, idamattithitā-paccupaṭṭhānāni.

Or else,

Nilloluppa-lakkhaṇāni, anādīnava-rasāni,² aparihāni-paccupaṭṭhānāni.

Kāni ādi-majjha-pariyosānāni?

Samādānām ādi, paṭisevanā majjho, somanassam anto.

1. It will be noted that these explanations are simpler and more natural than those given by B. in II. 81-82.

2. Tib. supports *anādīnava* (ཤན་དུ་_nvā)

CHAPTER IV

SAMADHI-PARICCHEDO

[Bk. 2.9a.5—2.14a.7; Tak. 406c.-408a. Cf. Vis. III.1-25.]

When the *yogāvacara* with pure conduct has practised dhutas, he should cultivate *saṃādhi*.

Upa., as usual, sets up a number of questions which he answers and thus treats the subject. Here, however, he does not take up the questions in the same order. He changes the order in one place at least. All the questions except the last one, 'Kathampi *saṃādhi* uppādetabbo?' are answered by him in this chapter. The last one is answered in subsequent chapters.

III. 3

1. *Ko saṃādhi?* It is the concentration of the mind, already purified, on an object, so that it is not distracted. [Cf. B. III.3] Upa. gives another alternative definition supporting himself by a quotation from the Abhidhamma which is none but the definition of *saṃādhi* given in Vibh. 217, Dhs. §§ 11, 15, 24, 287, 570.

III. 4
diff.

2. *Kāni tassa lakkhaṇa-rasa-paccupatṭhāna-padaṭṭhānāni?*
What Upa. says in this connection does not agree with B's. statement given in III.4.

3. *Ko puggalo saṃādahissati?*

He who can hold his thoughts in a perfect, balanced state, like a man who keeps himself well-balanced while carrying the bowl of oil [Cf. S. v. 170 for this simile.], or like the four horses that pull the chariot with equal force.

N.O.

4. *Jhāna-vimokkha-saṃādhi-saṃāpattiṇam kiñ nānākaraṇam?*

Jhānan ti paṭhamajjhānādīni cattāri jhānāni.

Vimokkho ti 'ajjhattam rūpasaññā bahiddhā rūpāni passati' ti ādayo aṭṭha vimokkhā.

Saṃādhi ti savitakka-savicārādayo tayo saṃādhayo.

Saṃāpatti ti nava anupubba-saṃāpattiyo.

[This corresponds to the explanation of these terms in Vibh. 342, 343.]

Upa. also goes into the details of the interpretation of the word *jhāna*, the first interpretation of which corresponds to B.'s interpretation: *ārammaṇa-upanijjhānattā* in IV. 119.

5. *Kati ānisamsā?* *Cattāro*: [Cf. B. XI. 120-124, where we have *five* mentioned, the last of which *nirodhāni-samsa* is not mentioned here.]

(i) *Diṭṭhadhamma-sukhavihāritā*. When a man attains *samādhi*, he finds delight and experiences *pabbajjā-sukha*. Upa. also gives a quotation in which the Blessed One is speaking of the days he spent in the state of *samādhi*, while he was practising the *niganṭha* practices, for seven days and nights.¹

(ii) *Vipassanāya sukhā kiriya*. When a man's mind is free from *nīvaraṇas*, and when he has attained the pliability of mind by the training of *samādhi*, he can have a penetrative insight into the *khandhas*, *āyatanas*, *dhātus*, and so on.

(iii) *Abhiññā-sacohikiriya*. One can attain the five miraculous powers of *iddhividha*, *dibbasota*, *paracittavijānanā*, *pubbenivāsānussati*, and *dibbacakkhu*. [See Chapter Nine, p. 86]

(iv) *Bhava-sampatti* [corresponding to *bhava-visesa* of B. XI.123]. The man who has attained *samādhi* does not fall back from it [Cf. *samādhimhā na pari-hāyati* in B. XI. 123], but does attain a fruit. He attains, if he does not become an *asekha*, *rūpārūpabhāva-visesa*, as the Blessed One has said: *Paṭhamam jhānam parittam bhāvetvā Brahma-pārisajjataṇ pāpuṇāti*.

6. *Kati dhammā samādhissa antarāyakarā?* *Atṭha dhammā*: N.C. *Kāmacchando*, *byāpādo*, *thīna-middham*, *uddhac-cam*, *vicikicchā*, *avijjā*, *pīti-sukhavirahitatā*², *sabbe ca pāpakā dhammā*.

7. *Kati dhammā samādhissa hetū?* *Atṭha dhammā*³: sa- N.C. *upanissayatā* (是因), *pabbajjā* (?出)⁴, *pahānaṇ*

XI. 120-24
mentions
five

1. Is this a correct representation? Cf. M. i. 94 (Sutta no. 14), where the Buddha is represented as saying to the *Niganṭhas* that he could live in a state of *samādhi* even for seven days.

2. 無喜樂. The meaning is not quite clear.

3. I am not sure about the accuracy of the eight dhammas given here, as the sense is likely to change with a different punctuation.

4. Cf. Jā i. 14, where among the eight requirements given for the successful accomplishment of one's desire, are mentioned *hetu*..... *pabbajjā* etc.

(雜, *nīvaraṇānām?*), *adosa*, *vijjā*, *avikkhepo*, *sabbe kusalā dhammā cittābhippamodakā*, *sabbe kusalā dhammā dhamma-ñāṇasamuppādakā ca*.

8. *Kati samādhissa sambhārā? Sattavidhā:*

N.C.

Aneka-vihitam sīlam, santuṭṭhitā, indriyesu gutta-dvāratā, bhojane mattaññutā, rattiya pāṭhamē majjhime pacchime yāme amiddhata,¹ niccaṁ sati-sampajaññam, paviveka-vihāro ca.

9. *Katividhō samādhi?*

III. 7

(i) *Duvidhō* : [Cf. B. III. 7 which differs considerably.]

(a) *Lokuttaro* : *ariya-phalena samadhibhagato*.

Lokiyo : *seso*;

N.C.

Ayam lokiyo samādhi sāsavo, saṁyojaniyo, ganthaniyo,.....sankilesiko,² vutta-vipariyāyena lokuttaro.

(b) *Micchā samādhi* : *akusala-cittekkaggatā*; *vahātabbo vā [samādhi]*.

Sammā samādhi : *kusala-cittekkaggatā*; *bhāvetabbo vā [samādhi]*.

III. 6

(c) *Upacāra-samādhi* : *tassa tassa jhānassa pubbabbhāye [pavatto]*.

Appañā-samādhi : *gotrabhū-anantarā*. [B. III. 6 says : *parikammānantarā*.]³

III. 11

(ii) *Tividhō* :

III. 12

(a) *Savitakka-savicāro* : *paṭhamāñ jhānañ*. } Corresponds to B. III
Avitakka-pariṭṭa-vicāro : *dutiyajjhānañ*. } ponds
Avitakka-avicāro : *sesajjhānāni*. } to B. III 12.

(b) *Pitiyā saha uppanno* : *paṭhamaj- jhānañ ca dutiyajjhānañ ca.* } Corresponds to B. III. 12.
Sukhena saha uppanno : *tatiyaj- jhānañ*. }
Upekkhāya saha uppanno : *catut- thajjhānañ*. }

1. In Pāli books this is generally referred to as *jāgariyānuyoga*.

2. See Dhs. § 584.

3. See B. IV. 74, XXI. 130, 134, 135 from which it appears that the words *parikamma*, *upacāra*, *anuloma* and *gotrabhū* did not signify much distinction.

(c) *Kusalo* : *Ariyamaggo* ; *sekhehi ca puthujjanehi ca N.C.*
bhāvito rūpāvacara-arūpāvacara-samādhi ca.

Vipāko : *Ariyaphalam* ; *sekhehi ca puthujjanehi ca uppāditā rūpārūpāvacarā dhātū ca.*

Kiriyā : *Asekhenā samāpanno rūpārūpāvacara-samādhi.* [See foot-note 2 on the next page.]

(iii) *Catubbidho* :

(a) *Kāmāvacaro* : *tena tena āciṇño samāpatti-ācārō.*

Rūpāvacaro : *cattāri jhānāni.*

Arūpāvacaro : *oattāro arūpāvacarā samādhayo, kusala-kammavipākā ca.*

Apariyāpanno : *cattāro maggā ca cattāri phalāni ca.*

(b) *Dukkhā paṭipadā dandhābhiññā*
Dukkhā paṭipadā khippābhiññā
Sukhā paṭipadā dandhābhiññā
Sukhā paṭipadā khippābhiññā

III. 23
p.a.

Cf. B. III. 23.

(c) *Paritto samādhi parittārammaṇo*
Paritto samādhi appamāṇārammaṇo
Appamāṇo samādhi parittārammaṇo
Appamāṇo samādhi appamāṇārammaṇo

The explanation generally agrees¹ with that of B. in III. 14-19.
g.a.

III. 20
explanation diff.

(d) *Chanda-samādhi*
Viriya-samādhi
Citta-samādhi
Vimāṇsā-samādhi

Agrees with B. III. 24. III. 24

(e) *Atthi samādhi Buddhehi samadhibhagato, na sāvakehi* : N.C.
Mahākaruṇā samādhi, Yamaka-pāṭihāriya-samādhi² ca.
Atthi samādhi sāvakehi samadhibhagato, na Buddhehi : - sekhaphala-samādhi.

1. Cf. Mvy. 1245-48 where the Chinese characters are entirely different from those given in our Chinese Text.

2. Also see p. 80. The *ñāṇas* of these two names are also given in Vim. Bk. 6. 14. 5-6, Ps. i. 3 and explained in Ps. i. pp. 125-26.

*Atthi samādhi sāvakehi samadhigato, Buddhehi ca:
nava anupubba-samādhi, asekha-phala-samādhi ca.
Atthi samādhi neva Buddhehi samadhigato na
sāvakehi ca: Asaññi-samādhi.¹*

N.C. (f) *Atthi samādhi uppādāya, na nirodhāya: kāmāvacarē
kusalo akusalo samādhi.*
*Atthi samādhi nirodhāya na uppādāya: catu-ariya-
magga-samādhi.*
*Atthi samādhi uppādāya ceva nirodhāya ca: sekha-
puthujjanānam rūpārūpāvacara-kusala-samādhi.*
*Atthi samādhi neva uppādāya na nirodhāya ca:
sabba-phala-samādhayo, kiriya-samādhi² ca.*

III. 21 (g) *Paṭhamam jhānam*
Dutiyam jhānam
Tatiyam jhānam
Catuttham jhānam

(iv) *Pañcavido:*

III. 25 (a) Referring to the five trances, i. e. one more added to the four just mentioned above. This corresponds to B. III. 25. Upa. further discusses this fivefold division and says that this division is made with reference to the two kinds of men who have mastered the first *jhāna*—one to whom only *vitakka* appears as gross, another to whom both *vitakka* and *vicāra* appear as gross.

N.C. (b) *Pañcanga-samāpatti:* [See *pañcangika sammāsamādhi* in Vbh. 334, VbhCm. 420-21; Ps. i. 48, PsCm. i. 125-26; D. iii. 277, DCm. iii. 1059; A. iii 25-27, ACm. iii. 235.]

Pīti-pharaṇatā (瀟): *paṭhame jhāne dutiye jhāne ca.*
Sukha-pharaṇatā: *tīsu jhānesu.*

Ceto-pharaṇatā: *paracittañāṇe.*

Aloka-pharaṇatā: *dibbacakkhu-abhiññāya.*

Paccavekkhaṇā-saññā (想): *tamhā tamhā samādhi-
mhā vuṭṭhitassa paccavekkhaṇā-ñāṇe.* [Is 想 used for

1. See p. 55; Mvy. 1987; also see p. 53 for *asaññi* gods.

2. Cf. *Kiriya-jhāna*, Vibhanga, pp. 268, 281, 282.

3. The Chinese character 潟 is used both for *pāripūri* as well as *pharaṇatā*. See Mvy. 4304, 6334, and 6491.

相 which would correspond to *nimitta* of the Pali texts? Such confusion of characters with similar sounds is not rarely met with in the Vimuttimagga.]

(c) *Pañcañānika-sammāsamādhi*: [See Vbh. 334, VbhCm. 420-21]

Ayañ samādhi paccuppannasukho ceva āyatiñ ca N.O. sukhavipāko ti paccattam yeva ñānam uppajjati.

Ayañ samādhi ariyo nirāmiso ti...

Ayañ samādhi sappaññehi [more akin to the reading of the VbhCm : *mahāpurisa-sevito*] *paṭisevito ti...*

Ayañ samādhi santo pañito paṭipassaddhiladdho ekodibhāvādhigato... [some more expressions are added which seem to be repeating what has been already said and others which do not agree with the readings of Vibhanga and its Commentary but they seem to suggest that this *samādhi* does not vanquish birth, death or egoism.]

Imañ samadhim sato va samāpajjati, [imasmañ samādhimhā] sato va uṭṭhahati ti paccattam yeva ñānam uppajjati.

Further, one has to properly understand the *kammaṭṭhāna*. He should understand whether the *ārammaṇa* is *hīna*, *majjhima* or *pañita*.

Thus one should know that there are many kinds of *samādhis*, but that all of them are included under four.

CHAPTER V

KALYĀNA-MITTA-PARIYESANA

[Bk. 2.14a.8—2.19.3 (end of Bk.2); Tak. 408a-409b.
Cf. Vis. III.61-73.]

Upa. takes up the last of the questions (No. 10) set up by him in the last chapter: *Kathampi samādhi uppādetabbo?*

The beginner in the practice of meditation (*ādikammika*), wishing to produce *jhāna-samādhi*, should seek the best *kalyāṇamitta*. For, he would become his guide, friend and relative taking every possible care of him. If he does not find such a friend, he becomes like an elephant without a goad, wandering alone, without anybody to direct, wherever it pleases him. This *kalyāṇamitta* is compared by Upa. to a skilful cart-driver, helmsman, doctor, father, mother or a teacher.

Who is *parama-kalyāṇamitta*? One should search for a man who is well-versed in the Sutta, Abhidhamma and Vinaya, well-versed in understanding different kinds of *kamma* (? 業), who has attained the *kusala-jhāna-abhiññā* and who has an insight into the Four Truths.

If he does not find such a man, he should take recourse to one who is endowed with the seven qualities which are exactly the same as are mentioned in the following stanza of B.III.61:¹

III. 61
id.

*Piyo garu bhāvaniyo vattā ca vacanakkhamo
gambhīrañ ca kathampi kattā no ca'ṭṭhāne nivesaye.*

Upa. comments on all the seven qualities mentioned here. While commenting on the last phrase: *no ca'ṭṭhāne nivesaye*, Upa. mentions *kula*, *ñāti*, *āvāsa*, *kamma*, *gaya* and *gantha* as the *atṭhānas* which should be avoided. [These are only six of the ten *paṭibodhas* mentioned by B. in III.29.] Such a man he should seek.

Now comes the next question as to how he should seek such a man.

Kathampi pariyesitabbo? If he knows that such and such a person living in such and such a place has the necessary

1. See A. iv. 132, Netti p. 164, Peṭakopadesa p. 96, (Bur. ed. 163).

qualifications and is highly respected, and if he be a *jhānācariya*, he should go to him. If he does not personally know of such a person, he should make inquiries with others about such a man, his country, his residence, his *jhānācariya*, and so on, and then go to him and express his wish.

The text goes on giving various details as to how he should behave while he is waiting upon his teacher. In this connection, there is one sentence which gives a very appropriate simile to express the behavior of this man while he is living with his teacher. 'He should not have any feelings of contempt, but, on the contrary, *like a newly-married bride going to wait upon her father-in-law, and mother-in-law*, should have *hiri* and *ottappa* and should receive instructions.'

If he sees a teacher of the Vinaya or of the Abhidhamma, or of the dhutas, he should try to learn things about them from him. If he sees a *jhānācariya* coming, and even if he be younger than himself, he should take his begging-bowl and clothes from his hand [as a mark of respect for him], and wait upon him. As soon as he finds a suitable opportunity, he should express his intention to him. He should abide by the instruction given to him.

The chapter closes with a number of gāthās attributed to the Buddha, summarising what one should avoid and what one should practise.¹

1. Though the subject-matter in this chapter and in B. III. 61-73 is the same, still there is a wide divergence in the method of handling the subject.

CHAPTER VI

CARIYA-PARICCHEDO

[Bk. 3.1.4-3.6.9; Tak. 409b-411a. Cf. Vis. III.74-102.]

The *ācariya* observing the behavior of his pupil for several days should prescribe a *kammaṭṭhāna* suitable to his disposition [*cariyā 行*]

There are fourteen kinds of *cariyā*:

III 74
refers to
fourteen
cariyās.

1. *Rāgā-cariyā*
2. *Dosa-cariyā*
3. *Moha-cariyā*
4. *Saddhā-cariyā*
5. *Buddhi-cariyā*
6. *Vitakka-cariyā*
7. *Rāga-dosa-cariyā*
8. *Rāga-moha-cariyā*
9. *Dosa-moha-cariyā*
10. *Sama-bhāga-cariyā¹* (等分行): *rāga, dosa, moha* taken equally together.
11. *Saddhā-buddhi-cariyā*
12. *Saddhā-vitakka-cariyā*
13. *Buddhi-vitakka-cariyā*
14. *Sama-bhāga-cariyā* (等分行); *saddhā, buddhi, and vitakka* taken equally together.

} [B. in III. 74 refers to the fourteen *cariyās* but accepts only six, corresponding to the first six of these.]

Further, several other cases may be made through *tanhā*, *ditthi*² and *māna*² [cf. B.III. 78] but they may not be considered as quite distinct in meaning. From these fourteen *cariyās*, we get fourteen classes of men such as *rāga-carita*, *dosa-carita* and so on.

These fourteen can be reduced to seven. Nos. 1 and 4 can become one and the same. So also, Nos. 2 and 5, 3 and 6, 7 and 11, 8 and 12, 9 and 13, and 10 and 14.

1. Cf. *samabhāgacarita* of Pet. VII. p. 157 (Bur. ed. v. 190); also 'Tattha rāga-dosa-moha-samabhāgacaritassa puggalassa visesabhāgīyam jhānam hoti' in Pet. VII. p. 162 (Bur. ed. p. 192).

2. Cf. *Sphuṭārthābhidharmakośavyākhyā* (Bibl. Buddhica XXI) p. 55, (comment on I. 26) where we have a list of twelve kinds of people possessing different *cariyās* including these two.

Why is it so? The reasons given are in substantial agreement with those given by B. in Vis. III. 75-77, and many of the sentences from those paragraphs can be traced here word for word.

III. 75-77
many sentences id.

Of these seven classes of men, nos. 1, 2 and 7 have *khippā patipadā*, while nos. 3, 8 and 9, and the class made of nos. 10 and 14 have *dandhā patipadā*. These seven classes can further be reduced to three, *rāga-carita*, *dosa-carita* and *moha-carita*, in so far as their *mūla-kilesa* (本煩惱) is concerned.

The following questions about these cariyās are set up and answered:

(i) *Etā tisso cariyā kinnidānā?* The answer is [Cf. III. 79-82.] :

(a) *Pubbāciṇṇa-nidānā: pubbe kira itthappayoga-subhakammabahulo.....(almost word for word the same as in B. III.80.)* III. 79-82 almost id.

(b) *Dhātu-nidānā:* The same as B. III.81, the first half of which refers to dhātus.

(c) *Dosa-nidānā:* (α) *semhādhiko rāgacarito, pittādhiko dosa-carito, vātādhiko moha-carito.* Or, it is said: (β) *semhādhiko moha-corito, vātādhiko rāga-carito.* B. refers to these views. s.d. but B. refers to this view in III. 81.

[In Vis. III.81, B. refers to a view which corresponds to this view, except that he points out in III. 82, that according to this view, only *rāga* and *moha* are explained, while in this text, we find the mention of all the three, *rāga*, *dosa* and *moha*. He also points out that the two (α and β) exactly opposite views about the *rāga-carita* and *moha-carita* make the position of those who hold this view untenable. B. ascribes this view to 'Ekacce' which Dhammapāla in his comment explains as follows: 'Ekacce' ti **Upatissattheram sandhāya āha.** Tena hi **Vimuttimagge tathā vuttam**', (p. 113 Burmese edition.)]

(ii) *Kathām ca jānitabbam ayām puggalo rāgacarito, ayām dosacarito, ayām moha-carito ti?*

The answer is that all these things can be known in seven ways:

(a) *Ārammaṇato* (以事). This substantially agrees III. 94. with *dassanādito* of B. III. 94.

1. Of P. G. Munḍyne Piṭaka Press 1909; but Zabu Meit Swe Press ed. (1913) p. 105; Sinhalese edition p. 96.

III. 95
diff.III. 88,
91, 93.B. III.
97-100

(b) *Kilesato*. This corresponds to *dhammappavattito* of B. III. 95; but the names of the dhammas ascribed to each of the three classes of men do not always agree. Upa. mentions only five evil dhammas for each of these three classes of men, while B. mentions several dhammas for each of the six classes he accepts.

(c) *Gamanato*. This substantially agrees with B. III. 88, excepting the quotation from the Commentary on the Māgandiya-sutta to which there is nothing corresponding in this text.

(d) *Cīvara-pāpuraṇato*. This gives only a general description of the nature of clothes liked by each of these three kinds of men.

(e) *Bhojanato*. Substantially agrees with B. III. 93.

(f) *Kiccato*. Substantially agrees with B. III. 91.

(g) *Seyyādito*. Substanally agrees with B.III. 91 and a part of *iriyāpathato* in III. 88.

(iii) *Katham cīvaraṁ pārupati, bhojanam bhuñjati, katham assa senāsanam, gocaro, iriyāpatho ca ?* The answer follows seriatim :

(a) *Cīvara-samādānaṁ*. This corresponds to the passage regarding *nivāsana-pāpurana* and *ārammana* in B. III. 97-101.

(b) *Bhojanāhāra*. This roughly corresponds to the remarks on *yāgubhutta-khajjaka* in B. III. 97, 100.

(c) *Senāsana*. This corresponds to the remarks on *send-sana* in B. III. 97, 99. It is interesting to note a remark of Upa. that a *mohacarita* should stay in the vicinity of his *ācariya*.

(d) *Gocara*. This roughly corresponds to the remarks on *bhikkhācāramagga* and *bhikkhācāra-yāma* in B. III. 97-100. There is another interesting remark made by Upa. that a *rāgacarita* should go into the village facing the sun, a *dosacarita* with his back towards the sun, and a *mohacarita* any way he pleases.

(e) *Iriyāpatha*. Upa. tells us what different postures are resorted to by the three classes of men. He mentions that a *dosacarita* is given more to sitting and lying, while the *mohacarita* to walking.

* * * * *

Upa. adds *pakiṇṇakakathā*.

A *rāgacarita* believes in agreeable objects, a *dosacarita* in N.C. disagreeable ones, and a *mohacarita* sees nothing in which he can believe. A *rāgacarita* is like a slave, a *dosacarita* like a master, and a *mohacarita* like poison. A *rāgacarita* loves colour (*vanna*), a *dosacarita* loves finding fault, and a *mohacarita* loves idleness.¹

1. This chapter on the whole reveals a remarkably close agreement between Vis. and Vim., perhaps because as B. has said in III. 96, both of them are following the same ācariya-mata [*kevalam* ācariya-matānusārena *vuttam*]. There are several passages which are found word for word in both the texts.

CHAPTER VII

KAMMATĀTHANA-PARICCHEDO

[Bk. 3.6.10—3.11a-2; Tak. 411a-412b. Cf. Vis. III.105-121.]

III. 105
enumerates
forty
kam-
maṭṭānas.

Having observed the *cariyā* of his pupil, the *ācariya* should prescribe the thirty-eight kammaṭṭānas and also instruct him in two [more], as would befit his *cariyā*. Which are the thirty-eight kammaṭṭānas?

- 1-10 *Dasa kasiṇā*: *paṭhavō*, *āpo*, *tejo*, *vāyo*, *nōla*, *pīta*, *lohita*, *odāta*, *ākāsāyatana* and *viññāṇāyatana*.¹
- 11-20 *Dasa asubhā*: *uddhumātaka*, *vinīlaka*, *vipubbaka*, *vicchiddaka*, *vikkhāyitaka*, *vikkhittaka*, *hatavikkhittaka*, *lohitaka*, *pūlavaka*, and *atthika*.
- 21-30 *Dasa anussatiyo*: *Buddhānussati*, *dhammānussati*, *sanghānussati*, *sīlānussati*, *cāgānussati*, *devatānussati*, *maraṇasati*, *kāyagatāsati*, *ānāpānasati*, and *upasamānussati*.
- 31-34 *Cattāri appamāṇa-cittāni* [or, *catasso appamaññā*, corresponding to B's. *brahmavihārā*]: *mettā*, *karuṇā*, *muditā* and *upekkhā*.
- 35 *Catudhātuvavatthānam*
- 36 *Ahāre paṭikkūlasaññā*
- 37 *Akiñcaññāyatanaṇ*
- 38 *Nevasaññā-nāsaññāyatanaṇ*

[Mark the change in the order from that in Vis. III.105, according to which the order of these kammaṭṭānas after no. 34, would be 9, 10, 37, 38, 36, 35 of those given in this list, while *āloka-kasiṇa* and *paricchinnākāsa-kasiṇa* are given by B. as the last two of the kasiṇas.]

1. Upa. does not include in this list *āloka-kasiṇa* and *paricchinnākāsa-kasiṇa* given by B., although it is clear that he knew these two. He includes them in the other two mentioned above. Besides, when he comes to the detailed treatment of these kammaṭṭānas he does mention these two and gives a detailed treatment of them. See pp. 58, 59. It is, however, clear that there was a classification, even in the old Pali texts, of thirty-

One should know these thirty-eight kammatthānas well in the following *nine* ways [B. mentions ten ways, of which the first *sankhātaniddesato* may as well be said to have been given in the enumeration above.]

(i) *Jhānato*. This corresponds to *upacārappanāvahato* and *jhānappabhedato* of B. III.106-107, but differs in this that Upa. adds a class of *catukka-pañcakajjhāna* to which he ascribes the first eight kasiṇas and *ānāpāna-sati*, adds a class of āruppas to which he ascribes nos. 9, 10, 37, 38 of the list given above, and that he ascribes only *upekkhā* (of the appamaññas) to the *catukkajjhānika* class.

(ii) *Samatikkamato* : III. 108
diff.

- (a) *Rūpasamatikkama*: excepting the āruppa kasiṇas (nos. 9 and 10 from the above list) in the remaining eight kasiṇas only; in the remaining thirty there is no *rūpasamatikkama*.
- (b) *Ārammaṇa-samatikkama* is seen in the three kammatthānas only, the two āruppakaśinas and in the *ākiñcaññāyatana*; not in the remaining thirty-five.
- (c) *Saññā-vedanā-samatikkama* in no. 38 only, and not in the remaining.

[B. mentions in III 108: *Dve samatikkamā: angasamatikkamo ca ārammaṇasamatikkamo ca*.]

(iii) *Vadḍhanato*. This corresponds to *vadḍhanāvadḍhanato* of B. III.109-116, but there is an important difference. According to Upa. the *nimitta* of the ten kasiṇas and the four *appamāṇacittāni* should be developed and the remaining should not be developed. B. is vehemently against developing the *nimitta* of the brahmavihāras which correspond to the four appamāṇacittas. [See B. III.113-114]. III. 109-16.
B. combats
this view.

eight kammatthānas. See Dhs. para 203, Aṭṭhasālini pp. 158, 168, 187. B. himself refers to it in Vis. VI. 56 in these words: *Pāliyam hi vibhatta-āṭṭhatimsārammaṇesu evarūpaṇam bheravārammaṇam nāma natthi*. The last two of the kasiṇas as mentioned in this list are found in M. ii. 14-15, Ps. i. 6, and Abhk. VIII. 36a; also Netti p. 89. See MCm. ii. 236: *āṭṭhatimsārammaṇesu cittaruciyaṇam kammatthānam gahetvā*. Also cf. MCm. i. 195 ii. 358.

III. 103
mentions
ten ways.

III. 120
diff.

(iv) *Paccayato*. This corresponds to B. III.120 which goes into more details than this text. Nine *kammaṭṭhānas*, the first eight *kasiṇas* and the *paricchinnākāsa-kasiṇa*,¹ become the *paccaya* of the *abhiññās* and the remaining thirty do not become. Excluding the last no. 38, the remaining thirty-seven become the *paccaya* of *vipassanā*. *Nevasaññānāsaññāyatana* does not become. [B. does not agree with this view.²]

III. 117
diff.

(v) *Ārammaṇato*:

(a) *Paṭibhāgārammaṇāni*—twenty-one: excluding *viññāṇakasiṇa*, the remaining nine *kasiṇas*, the ten *asubhas*, *ānāpānasati* and *kāyagatāssati*. [According to B. they are twenty-two, and he inserts the ten *kasiṇas* according to his enumeration.]

(b) *Sabhāvadhammārammaṇāni*—twelve: *viññāṇakasiṇa*, *nevasaññānāsaññāyatana*, and the ten which bring about *jhāṇūpacāras*.³

(c) *Paṭibhāgārammaṇāni sabhāvārammaṇāni ti vā na vattabbāni*—five: the four *appamāṇacittāni* and *ākiñcaññāyatana*. [B. has six adding *ākāsānañcāyatana*.]

N.C.

There seems to be a long digression here giving the sixteen kinds of *ārammaṇas* and the allocation of the different *kammaṭṭhānas* to each of these *ārammaṇas*. [cf. B. XIII. 105 where twelve *ārammaṇas* are mentioned based upon the four triads of them given in Dhs. p. 2.]

(vi) *Visesato* (爲勝). Upa. tells us here the special distinctive character of some of these *kammaṭṭhānas*. For instance, the *appamāṇa* cittas have their special character in that they are faultless, or that *catudhātuvavatthāna* is called *paññāviseṣa* because it discerns the emptiness (*suññatā*) of things.

1. Apparently from the two additional *kammaṭṭhānas*.

2. Also Cf. B. XVII. 75.

3. These seem to correspond to B.'s eight *anussatis* (excluding *ānāpāna* and *kāyagatā* from the ten) and *āhāre paṭikkūla-saññā* and *catudhātuvavatthāna*. See B. III. 106.

(vii) *Bhūmito*. This substantially agrees with B. III. 118, except that this text uses the word *rūpaloka* instead of *brahmaloka*, and that it does not have any sentence corresponding to *manussesu sabbāni pi pavattanti*.

(viii) *Gahañato*. Agrees with B. III. 119, except that Upa. includes *kāyagatāsati* under *sutena*.

(ix) *Rāgacaritādito*. [N. C. for the first half.]

A *rāga-carita* should not practise the four *appa-māṇa* cittas, because they are the *subhanimitta*. For a *rāgacarita*, *subhasaññā* is not proper, just as fatty or oily things are not good for a man who has a preponderence of phlegm (*semha*) in his humors. A *dosacarita* should not practise the ten asubhas because they are not suitable to him, just as a hot drink is not suitable to a man who has a preponderence of bile (*pitta*) in his humors. A *mohacarita* whose understanding is not developed may not allow himself to practise any *kammaṭṭhāna*, because he does not know the proper means (*upāyā* 方便). If he does not know the proper means, his efforts are fruitless. He would be like a man who rides an elephant without a goad.

A *rāgacarita* should practise asubhasaññas and *kāyagatā sati* which are, so to say, proper antidotes against *rāga*. A *dosacarita* should practise the four *appa-māṇa* cittas which are an antidote for *dosa*, or should practise the *vaṇṇa-kasiṇas*, because they are agreeable to his mind. [For this and the remaining part under this heading, see B. III. 121.] A *saddhācarita* should practise the six *satiṭṭhānāni* beginning with *Buddhā-nussati*, because *saddhā* makes one settled or steady [定]. A *buddhīcarita* should practise *oatudhātu-vavatthāna*, *āhāre paṭikkūlassaññā*, *maraññasati*, and *upasamānussati* because they are profound. And, further, a *buddhīcarita* has no obstacle in any *kammaṭṭhāna*. A *vitakkaoarita* should practise *ānāpānasati*, because it cuts off vitakkas. A *mohacarita* should, with faith, ask about and hear about the *Dhamma*, have reverence for it and should live with his teacher and develop his own understanding.

Out of these thirty-eight *kammaṭṭhānas*, one may practise, when one likes, *marañasati* and *catudhātuvavatthāna*, which are the best.

The chapter concludes with the following paragraph to which there does not appear to be anything corresponding in B.

N.O.

A *rāgacarita* with a dull intellect (*mudindriya*) should practise *asubhānupassanās*, while he who is endowed with a sharp intellect should practise *satiṭṭhānas*, and thus remove *rāga*. A *dosacarita* with a dull intellect should practise the four *appamāṇa* cittas, while one with a sharp intellect should develop his insight and thus remove *dosa*. A *mohacarita* with no intellect (*anindriya*) should not practise any *kammaṭṭhāna*, while one with an average intellect should develop *ānāpānasati* for removing *vitakka*. [cf. B. III. 121: *mohacaritassa vitakkaritassa ca ekam ānāpānasatikammaṭṭhānam eva.*]

III. 121

CHAPTER VIII

行門¹

[KAMMA-DVĀRA (?)]

PART ONE

[1-10 *KASIṄA*]

[Bk. 4. 1. 4—4. 20. 10 (end of the Bk. 4); Tak. 411b-417c.
Cf. Vis. IV. 21-138]

1. PATHAVI-KASIṄA.

Upa. as usual sets up a number of questions which he answers one after another. He explains the meaning of the word *paṭhavī-kasiṄa* and tells us about its *lakkhana*, *rasa*, *padaṭṭhāna* and ānisamsas, which last agree very slightly with those mentioned in B. V. 28.

He goes on to discuss the two kinds of *paṭhavī*, natural and artificial (*akata* and *kata* of B. IV. 22). The former (*akata*) is not good for a *yogāvacara* because the *paṭibhāga-nimitta* will not be produced from it. The latter is of four different colours white, black², red and of dawn-colour (*aruṇa-varṇa* 明色). Of these one should choose that of the dawn-colour, for if he chooses other colours, it would mean he is practising *vāṇṇakasiṄa*.

IV. 22

A man who has already had practice in *jhānas* will soon have *paṭibhāganimitta*. But a new man should make a *maṇḍala*, circular, four-sided or three-sided, in a quiet place, a place of worship, a store-house or under a tree. That place should neither be too dark, nor have too much light. It should be away from non-human beings (*amanussa* 非人). This *maṇḍala* may either be on a piece of cloth, or on a board of wood or on a partition-wall. Upa. here remarks, that although it may be

B. does
not speak
of these
shapes.

1. Prof. Nagai translates 行門 as 'basis of action'. Apparently this seems to be used in the same sense as *kammattāna* (行處). It is, however, difficult to see why Upa. uses the former Chinese expression for the latter used in the preceding chapter.

2. B. has the word *pita*, yellow (IV. 24).

IV. 22

permissible to have the different kinds of *mandala*, circular and so on, or on a piece of cloth and so on, still former teachers consider a circular one, and that too on the earth, as the best. He also goes into some more details as to how he should take a compass and make a circle and then prepare a *mandala* out of wet earth. It should be of the size of a winnowing-basket or a water-bowl (*suppamattam vā sarāvamattam vā*) as B. quotes in IV. 22 from some old source.

IV. 27

If a man wishes to practise upon the *pathavī-kasiṇa*, he must first reflect upon the disadvantages of worldly pleasures (*kāmesu ādīnava*) and the advantages of *nekhamma* (出離). To show the disadvantages of worldly pleasures Upa. gives a number of similes, taken from Majjhima 22nd sutta, which B. merely indicates by saying: *appassādā kāmā ti ādinā nayena*. [B. IV. 27.]

Upa. interprets the word *nekhamma* in two ways: first, it means to leave home and then to practise *kusala*; or it means to be away from the desires of sense. He also shows in a detailed manner the contrast between *kāma* and *nekhamma*.

When the *yogāvacara* has seen the disadvantages of worldly pleasures and the advantages of *nekhamma*, he should see what he should do and what he should not do. He should be moderate in food, remove idleness, take a seat after washing his hands and feet, and reflect upon the Enlightenment of the *Buddha*, upon the *Dhamma* and the *Sangha*. He should place his seat (*āsana* 坐具) at a distance equal to the length of a yoke (*yuga* 輛²) from the *mandala*, sit cross-legged with his body erect, and mindfulness alert, and look at the *mandala* with his eyes half open. ..

In three ways he takes the *nimitta*:

IV. 28

(i) *Samena ummīlanena*. [This corresponds to B. IV. 28 and substantially agrees with it.]

1. 地法.

2. See Mvy. 5639; also B. IV. 26, *kasiṇamandalato addhateyya-hatthantare padese*.

(ii) *Upāyehi*. Upa. gives four kinds of upāyas or means N.C. to reflect properly so as to produce the *nimitta*. If the *nimitta* is disappearing he thinks that there is something wrong with himself. If he sees only a small *nimitta* or sees only half of the *mandala*, he should see the *mandala* complete and without any deficiency. When he thus sees it, he may then remain indifferent.

(iii) *Vikkhepappahānena*. By keeping his mind free from any distraction in four ways. He should not allow the balance of his mind to be disturbed by over-strenuous work, or by excessive elation of the mind, nor should he allow his mind to sink into lethargy or depression. [Cf. B. IV. 66-72, where B. illustrates this idea with various similes. Upa. gives none of them.] IV. 66-72.
diff.

Upa. then speaks of the two kinds of nimittas, *uggaha-nimitta* and *paṭibhāga-nimitta*. The former is a kind of *saññā* that arises out of the *mandala* and the latter arises out of the former. While explaining the word *nimitta*, Upa. says that the *paṭibhāga-nimitta* is merely an image of thought (*saññā-paṭibimba*). IV. 30-31

The *yogāvacara* should guard the *nimitta* in three ways:

(i) *akusalappahānena*, (ii) *kusalabhāvanāya*, and (iii) *niccasevanāya*. He explains these terms. [Explanation of P.A. (i) and (ii) seems to correspond to a few details given in B. IV. 35-41.] IV. 35-41
P.A.

Ko jhānūpacāro? Kā appnā? Kīm̄ tesāñ nānākarāṇam?

Upa. goes into far more details than B. He gives several similes to show the distinction between the two, in addition to the simile given by B. in IV. 33 of a young child (*daharakumāra*) to whom the *upacārajjhāna* is compared. IV. 33

When one has attained *upacāra* or *appnā*, one may develop the *kasiṇa* gradually, inch by inch, until it is spread over the whole earth. [This portion agrees in thought, though not in expressions, with B.IV.126-27.] IV. 126-127

When the *yogāvacara* has attained *upacāra* and is not able to produce *appnā*, he should try to produce it by these two means:

IV. 42-65 (i) By the practice of the ten ways and means that would help him to reach the *appanā*. [These ten are the same ten ways mentioned and explained by B. in IV. 42, and IV. 43-65, respectively, with this slight difference that Upa. adds one, *anassādatā* after *cittam nigganhāti* and puts *asamāhita-puggala-parivajjanato* and *samāhita-puggala-sevanato* into one. Thus he has the same number ten.]

N.C. (ii) By a strong resolve (以受持). When he has understood the ten dhammas mentioned just above, he enters a solitary place, knows his *nimitta* thoroughly, attains mastery over what he has already attained. His mind feels joy, is at ease, and with a firm resolution is freed from kilesas. It accomplishes one *dhamma-rasa*.

With this special distinction his mind gets the means for the *appanā* and in no long time he reaches it.

He attains the first *jhāna* which is described in almost the same words as those in B. IV.79 :

IV. 79 *Vivicca' eva kāmehi vivicca akusalehi dhammehi savitakkam savicāram vivekajam pītisukham paṭhamam jhānam upasampajja viharati.*

This is the advantage of the *pathavī-kasiṇa*.

Upa. comments on this whole passage and his comment is much more elaborate as he goes into many more details than B.

He gives the various kinds of vivekas, and while explaining the word *kāma* gives the two divisions of *vatthu-kāma* and *kilesa-kāma* which he explains in general agreement with B., but he differs considerably in details. In this connection, Upa. refers to a book called 三藏, (lit. three boxes, three piṭakas) from which he gives a quotation which purports to say : *Allobhassa pāripūriyā kāmehi viveko sampajjati, adosassa.....amohassa pāripūriyā akusalehi dhammehi viveko sampajjati.*¹

IV. 89-90 While explaining the distinction between *vitakka* and *vicāra*, Upa. gives several similes in addition to those of *ghanṭābhi-ghāta* and *ghanṭānurava*, *pakkhavikkhepa* and *paribbhamana*,

1. See Peṭakopadesa, VIIth Chapter, p. 157 (printed Burmese edition p. 191) : *Tattha, allobhassa pāripūriyā vivitto hoti kāmehi, tattha adosassa pāripūriyā, amohassa pāripūriyā ca vivitto hoti pāpakehi akusalehi dhammehi.....*

given by B. in IV. 89-90. Upa. here again quotes 三藏 which purports to show that *vitakka* is the first application of the mind to the object of its thought, like seeing a person from a distance but not being able to recognize whether it is a man or woman.¹ Upa. also adds another interesting simile, among several others, in which he compares *vitakka* to a strong man muttering a *sutta* to himself, while *vicāra* is like pondering over the meaning of the *sutta*. At the close of his remarks on this subject, Upa. says that *vitakka* is equivalent to *niruttipaṭisambhidā*, and *paṭibhāva-paṭisambhidā*, while *vicāra* is equivalent to *attha-paṭisambhidā* and *dhamma-paṭisambhidā*.²

N.C.

While explaining the word *pīti*, in addition to the fivefold classification given by B. in IV. 94—the explanation of which, however, as given by Upa. is not the same as that of B.—Upa. gives another sixfold division as follows:

IV. 94

- (i) *Kāmato jātā*, (ii) *saddhāya jātā*, (iii) *akukkuccato jātā*,
- (iv) *vivekato jātā*, (v) *saṃādhito jātā*, and lastly (vi) *bojjhangato jātā*. Similarly, while explaining the word *sukha*, he gives five kinds of *sukha*:
- (i) *Hetu-sukha*, (ii) *sambhāra-sukha*, (iii) *viveka-sukha*,
- (iv) *nirupakkilesa-sukha*, and finally (v) *vedanā-su-
kha*.

N.C.

N.C.

While explaining the distinction between *pīti* and *sukha*, Upa. goes into many more points of distinction than those given by B. but in general purport his explanation agrees with that given by B. in IV. 100.

Upa. further continues the description of the first trance: *Pañcangavippahīnam*, *pañcangasamannāgatam*, *tividhakalyā-*

IV. 79

1. See Petakopadesa, VIIth Chapter, p. 158, (Burmese edition, p. 191): *Tattha paṭhamābhinipāto vitakko, paṭiladdhassa vicaraṇam vicāro; yathā puriso dūrato purisam passati āgacchantaṇam na ca tāraṇītī ‘itthi ti vā puriso’ti vā; yadāhu paṭilabhati ‘itthi ti vā puriso’ti vā, evam-vaṇhāno ti vā, evam-saṇṭhāno ti vā,’ ime vitakkayanto uttari upaparikkhanti (? ti): ‘kim kho ayañ silavā udāhu dussilo, addho vā duggato’ ti vā; evam vicāro vitakke appeti.*

2. See Petakopadesa, VIIth Chapter, p. 158 (p. 191 of the Burmese printed edition): *Yathā baliko humhiko (tunhiko, according to the printed edition) sajjhāyam karoti evam vitakko, yathā tam yeva anupassati evam vicāro.....Niruttipaṭisambhidāyam ca paṭibhāvapaṭi-sambhidāyam ca vitakko, dhamma-paṭisambhidāyam ca attha-paṭisambhidāyam ca vicāro.*

ṇam, dasalakkhaṇasampannam, pañcavīśati-guṇābhīyuttam. [Cf. B. IV. 79, where B. has nothing corresponding to the last adjective.]

While explaining the word *pañcangavippahīnam* he enumerates the five *nīvaraṇas* and while explaining the word *middha*, Upa. goes into a discussion which shows the attitude of the school of Upa. with regard to *middha*¹, which is entirely opposed to the attitude of B. and his school to the same *nīvaraṇa*.

Upa. gives three kinds of *middha*: *āhāraja*, *utuja*, and *cittaja*, of which only the last he considers as *nīvaraṇa*, while the other two are possible even in an Arhat.² To support his view, he gives the authoritative statement of Anuruddha, who is reported to have said that fifty-five years had elapsed since he had destroyed the *āsavas* and attained a state where there was no *middha* produced from *citta*, but it was only twenty-five years since he had destroyed *middha* produced from *āhāra* and *utu*.³ Upa. further says that although *middha* is a *rūpadhamma*, it is still a *cetasika upakkilesa*, because *rūpa* is something that defiles the mind. Although *middha* is a *kāyika dhamma* and *thīna* a *cetasika dhamma*, they are considered as one *nīvaraṇa* because they have the same *ārammaṇa* and the same *lakkhaṇa* in that they are identical with fatigue and exhaustion.

Upa. gives four kinds of *vicikicchā*. He also discusses the point as to why the *nīvaraṇas* are just five.

While commenting on the expression *pañcangasamannāgataṁ*, he gives the five *angas*, *vitakka*, *vicāra*, *pīti*, *sukha* and *ekaggatā*. Just as we cannot have a cart without its different parts, or an army without its sub-divisions⁴, so also we cannot have a *jhāna* without these *angas*. They are five because these five include all others, and because they are just the opposite of

1. See below pp. 95, 123; also DhsCm. p. 340.

2. See Petakopadesa VIIth Chapter, p. 180, (Burmese printed edition p. 201): *Atthi pana Arahato kāyakilesamiddham ca okkamati, na ca tam nīvaraṇam; tassa thīnamiddham nīvaraṇan ti na ekamseṇa.* Also cf. Miln. 253.

3. Cf. Theragāthā, stanza 904:

*Pañcapaññāsa vassāni yato nesajjiko aham
pañcavīśati vassāni yato middham samūhataṁ.*

4. See B. IV. 107; XVIII. 28. Abhk. viii. 7-8; Miln. 26-28: *Samanta-pāsādikā* i. 148.

the nīvaraṇas which are only five. In this connection Upa. gives another quotation from 三藏, which exactly corresponds to the quotation from Peṭaka given by B. in IV.86. It is word for word the same: *Samādhi¹ kāmacchandassa paṭipakkho, pīti byāpādassa, vitakko thīnamiddhassa, sukham uddhaccakukkuccassa, vicāro vicikicchāya.*

Commenting on *tividha-kalyāṇa*, Upa. gives three kinds of *kalyāṇas*, *ādi-kalyāṇa*, *majjhe-kalyāṇa*, and *pariyosāna-kalyāṇa* and about them he further remarks:

- (i) *Paṭipadāvisuddhi ādi*—explained as *sasambhāriko upacāro*. IV. 113-114
refers to
this.
- (ii) *Upekkhānubrūhanā majjhe*—explained as *appanā*.
- (iii) *Sampahāṃsanā pariyosānam*—explained as *paccavekkhaṇā*.²

In his comment on *dasalakkhana-sampannam*, Upa. gives the same lakkhanas as in the quotations from Ps. i. 167-168, given in B.IV. 111-113, except that Upa. uses *vivekapatipannam* instead of *samathapaṭipannam* in B.IV. 112. While commenting on *pañcavisatiguṇābhīyuttam* he gives the following twenty-five guṇas:

Vitakka, vicāra, pīti, sukha, ekaggatā; saddhā, sati, viriya, N.C. samādhi, paññā; ādi, majjha, anta; sankhepa-sangaha (斂攝), bhāvanā, viveka, nissaya, sangaha (攝受), anunaya (? 從); vipassanā; sevanā, bala, vimutti, visuddhi, and paramavisuddha-yoga-siddhi-vihāra (? 最勝清淨修成住).

To show the nature of this trance that it is a *dibbavihāra*, N.C. surpassing the human, produced from *viveka* and abiding in *pīti* and *sukha*, Upa. gives a quotation from M.i.276 in which the Buddha is represented to have given the following simile:

Seyyathā pi, bhikkhave, dakkho nahāpako vā nahāpakante-vāsī vā...vivekajena pītisukhena apphuṭam hoti.

Upa. also gives the application of the simile to the *yaśasācara* N.C. and his trance. He further says that this trance is of three

1. Lit. *ekaggatā* (一心) is used for *samādhi*. I have not yet been able to trace this quotation in the Peṭakopadesa. Also see DhsCm. 165.

2. This passage is very important to determine the relation between the Vim. and the Vis. as exactly this very interpretation, word for word, of these three terms is referred to by B. and he ascribed the same to *eke* (IV. 114). Dhamapāla in his comment on the word *eke* explains that the reference is to *Abhayagirivāsino*. [Burmese edition, p. 159]

kinds, *paritta*, *majjhima* and *pañña*. He who cultivates the first of these is born, at the end of his life, among the gods who may be in the circle of *Brahmā*,¹ and his life-period there is limited to *one third* of a *kappa*. One who cultivates the second of these is born among *Brahma* gods, where the life-period is limited to *one half* of a *kappa*. If one cultivates the last of these, then one is born among the *Mahābrahmas*, where the life-period is *one kappa*.²

The advantage of being born among the *Brahmā*-gods is of four kinds:

N.O.

- (i) *Hānabhāgiya*: like a man of dull faculties (*mudindriya*) who is careless. Upa. also gives other alternative explanations of this and discusses why one falls from the position once attained.
- (ii) *Thitibhāgiya*: like a man of dull faculties, who becomes careful and contemplates upon the *Dhamma*.
- (iii) *Visesabhāgiya*: like a man of keen faculties (*tikkhindriya*) who is careful and can attain the second trance when he likes.
- (iv) *Nibbedhabhāgiya*: like a man of keen faculties, who is careful and attains when he likes *vipassanā*, pursues thoughts of *nibbida* and *virāga*.

1. This seems to be the equivalent of *Brahma-pārisajjas*. See Abhs. p. 22, Chap. V. para. 6.

2. Cf. Abhs. p. 22, Chap. V. para. 6, where we find an exactly similar statement.

CHAPTER VIII

行門

[KAMMA-DVARA (?)]

PART TWO

[Bk.5.1.4-5.23.8 ; (end of Bk. five). Tak. 418a-424a. Cf. Vis. IV.139-V.26.]

The *yogāvacara* wishing to enter the second trance thinks of the disadvantages of the first trance and the advantages of the second. But he has first to attain mastery over the first trance. For, if he has not mastered the first trance, not only will he not be able to enter the second trance, but he will fall back even from the first. To illustrate this, Upa. like B. (IV. 130), gives the famous simile of *pabbateyyā gāvī*,¹ the mountain-cow, and shows its application also.

IV. 130

When the *yogāvacara* has thus attained mastery² over the first trance, he tries for the second, thinking of *vitakka* and *vicāra* as gross, and in no long time he attains the second trance. Upa., like B., follows Vibhanga 245, in the description of the second trance: *Vitakkavicārānam vūpasamā ajjhattam sampasādanam cetaso ekodibhāvam avitakkam avicāram samādhijam pitisukham dutiyam jhānam*.

IV. 139

Upa.'s comment on the words in this passage does not always agree with that of B. in its details, although in general spirit it agrees.

The description of the second trance is further continued: *duvanga-vippahīnam, duvanga(?)-samannāgatam, tividha-kalyānam, dasalakkhaṇa-sampannam, tevisati-yonābhīyuttam.*

IV. 149
s.d.

1. A. iv. 418-19.

2. Upa. does not mention the five kinds given by B. in IV. 131-137.

3. I fail to see why we have here the mention of two angas only. Vbh. 258 mentions four, *sampasāda*, *pīti*, *sukha*, and *cittassa ekaggatā*. See also Abhk. VIII. 7-8 which gives the same four angas in the second trance. Even Upa. himself mentions elsewhere (5.2.10) four as the number of angas for this trance. Peṭakopdesa VII. 155, VII. 206 (Burmese printed ed. pp. 190, 213) also mentions these four angas.

Upa. does not explain the words in this passage. There is nothing in B. corresponding to the word *tevisati-guṇābhīyuttam*. This second trance is further illustrated by the following simile from M.i. 276-77.

N.O.

Seyyathā pi, bhikkhave, udakarahado ubbhidodako etc. The passage here omits some details of expressions. Here also the application of the simile follows. This trance also is of three kinds, *paritta, majjhima, pañīta*, leading respectively to birth among the *Parittābhā, Appamāṇābhā* and *Abhassarā* gods, where the life-period is limited to *two, four and eight* kappas respectively.¹

Later after acquiring mastery over the second trance, the *yogāvacaara* proceeds to the third trance. It is described as follows:

IV. 153
id.

Pitiyā ca virāgā upekkhako ca viharati, sato ca sampajāno, sukhañ ca kāyena paṭisamvēdeti, yañ tam ariyā ācikkhanti, upekkhako satimā sukhavihāri ti tatiyāñ jhānam.

IV. 156
s.d.

In his comment on this passage, Upa. gives eight kinds of *upekkhā* while B. gives ten kinds (IV. 156), but later (IV. 167) B. explains that *sankhāra-upekkhā* and *tatramajjhattupekkhā* are included in some of the rest and so are not quite distinct. Upa. gives another three-fold classification also. Upa. also discusses the points raised by B. in IV. 171, 173 as to why *upekkhā* and *sati-sampajāñña* are not mentioned in the lower trances although they are there. We also find here the simile of *dhenupaka vaccha* given by B. in IV. 174.

Simile
from
IV. 174

Diff.

Upa.'s comment on *sukhañ ca kāyena.....sukha-vihāri* is much different, although we can trace a passage that corresponds to the quotation from Vbh. 259, given in B. IV.176. Upa. further continues the description of the third trance:

Ekangavippahānam, pañcanga-samannāgatañ, tividha-kalyāñam, dasa-lakkhaṇa-sampannam, dvāvīsatiguna-sampayutam.

N.O.

This trance is illustrated by the simile from M. i. 277: *Seyyā pi, bhikkhave, uppalinīyañ vā paduminiyam vā.....*

1. This idea corresponds to that expressed in Abhs. pp. 22-25, Chap. V. par. 6.

2. Cf. Vim. 5.7a. 4-5; see Vbh., 260 which gives the five angas as *upekkhā, sati, sampajāñña, sukha, and cittassa ekaggatā*; also Peṭakopadesa VI. 155, 206 (Burmese printed ed. pp. 190, 213).

apphuṭam hoti. The application of this simile also is given. This trance is described further as of three kinds, *paritta*, *majjhima* and *pañīta*, leading respectively to the birth among the *Parittasubha*, *Appamānasubha* and *Subhakinha* gods, where the life-period is respectively limited to *sixteen*, *thirty-two* and *sixty-four* kappas.¹

Having mastered the third trance, the *yogāvacara* proceeds to the fourth trance which is described in the same words as given by B. in IV. 183 :

Sukhassa ca pahānā dukkhassa ca pahānā pubbeva somanassa-domanassānam atthangamā adukkhamasukham upekkhā-satipārisudhiṁ catuttham jhānam.

Upa.'s comment on this passage generally agrees with that of B. in IV. 184-190, but does not here go into the distinction between *upacāra* and *appanā* as he has already given that kind of distinction before.² We also find here the quotations from S.v. 213-215, and from Vbh. 261, given by B. in IV. 186 and in IV. 194 respectively.

Upa. further continues the description of the trance : *ekanga-vippahinam*, *tivanga-samannāgatam*,³ *tividha-kalyāṇam*, *dasalakkhaṇa-sampannam*, *bāvīsatiguṇa-sampayuttam*. [B. has nothing corresponding to the last adjective and instead of *tivanga-samannāgatam* he gives *duvanga-samannāgatam*.]

This trance is further illustrated by the simile from M.i. 277-78: *Seyyathā pi, bhikkhave, puriso odātena vatthena sasīsaṁ pārupito nisinno assa, nāssa kiñci sabbavato kāyassa odātena vatthena apphuṭam assa, evameva.....etc.*

An ordinary man (*puthujjana*) is born among the *Vehapphala* gods. If his mind experiences *nibbida*, he is born among the *asaññi* gods where the life-period is limited to *forty* kappas.⁴ N.C. If he is a *samāna*, he is born either among the *Vehapphala*

1. The life-periods mentioned here agree with those given in Abhs. p. 22-23 par. 6.

2. See p. 45 above.

3. See Vbh. 261 where the fourth trance is explained as *upekkhā*, *sati* and *cittassa ekagattā*; also cf. Peṭakopadesa VI. 155 (Burmese printed ed. p. 190) which mentions *four angas* i.e., *adukkhamasukhā vedanā* in addition to the three given in Vibhanga.

4. Cf. Abhs. p. 23, Chap. V, para 6, where the life-period of these gods is given as 500 kappas.

gods, or in one of the five planes of the Pure Abodes (*Suddhā-vāsa-bhūmi*).¹

Upa. raises a question as to why in this trance there are no distinct grades of *phala* and *bhūmi*, as we had in the third trance. He answers that in the third trance, a coarser or a finer state is attained on account of coarser or finer angas, and so there could be had some distinct grades of *phala* and *bhūmi*; but in the fourth trance, all the angas are fine and so there can not be any such distinguishing grades.

AKASANĀNCAYATANA-SAMADHI.²

As described in the preceding trances, the *yogāvacara* sees the disadvantages of the last trance (i. e. the fourth trance in this case), as well as of material form (*rūpa*), and sees the advantages of the Meditation of Space (*ākāsa-samāpatti*) and considers this last as *santa* and *vimokkha*. Upa. gives the disadvantages of *rūpa* in words which correspond to the first half of the passage quoted in Vis. X. 1. The disadvantages of the fourth trance are described in words which also correspond to those used by B. in X. 5.

The *yogāvacara* first induces the fourth trance on the *pathavī-kasiṇa*, and then breaking³ through the *pathavī-nimitta* he attains the *ākāsānañcāyatana-samādhi*.

This attainment is described in the same words from Vbh. 245 as are quoted by B. in X. 12:

X. 12

Sabbaso rūpasāññānam samatikkamā, paṭigha-saññānam atthangamā, nānatta-saññānam amanasikārā, ananto ākāso ti ākāsānañcāyatanañ upasampajja viharati.

The comment on this passage generally agrees with that of B. except in the case of the words *rūpasāññā* and *ākāsa*. In the former case, Upa. agrees with Vbh. 261, and in the latter, he comes closer to Dhs. para. 638.⁴

In the explanation of *paṭigha-saññā* and *nānatta-saññā* also, Upa. follows Vibhanga 261. The points raised by B. in X. 15,

1. See p. 120 below.

2. Upa. immediately after the *rūpāvacara* trance proceeds to the āruppas, which are treated by B. in the Xth chapter.

3. B. X. 7: *kasiṇam ugghāṭento*.

4. Dhs. § 638: *yo ākāso, ākāsagatañ, aghañ aghagatañ, vivaro vivaragatañ, asamphuṭhañ catūhi mahābhūtehi, idañ tam rūpañ ākāsadhātu.*

18, 19, are also referred to by Upa. While illustrating the undisturbed condition of what Upa. calls *asaññi samādhi*, Upa. includes the name of Uddaka Rāmaputta also, along with that of [Ālāra] Kālāma, whom five hundred carts passed by and still they neither saw them, nor heard any sound of the carts passing by. B. mentions this incident of only Ālāra Kālāma. We also find, in the explanation of the word *ākāsānañcāyatana*, the illustration, as B. gives in X. 24, of *devānañ devāyatanañ*.

This *samādhi* is further described as *tivanga-samannāgatañ*, N.C. *tividha-kalyāññam*, *dasalakkhaña-sampannañ*, *bāvīsatigupñābhi-yuttam* to which there is nothing corresponding in B. As a reward for this trance, one is born among the *ākāsānañcāyatanañ-paga* gods where the life-period is limited to 2000 kappas.¹

VINNAÑAÑCAYATANA-SAMADHI.

The *yogāvacara* sees the disadvantages of the *ākāsānañcāyatanañ-samādhi* and sees the advantages of the *viññānañcāyatanañ-samādhi*, and in no long time goes from the lower to the higher *samādhi*, which is described in the same words from Vibhanga as are quoted in Vis. X. 27:

Sabbaso ākāsānañcāyatanañ samatikkamma anantam viññānan ti viññānañcāyatanañ upasampajja viharati. X. 27

The comment on this passage agrees in general with that of B. except in the case of *ākāsānañcāyatanañ samatikkamma* which is disposed off by Upa. in one sentence. Here also the illustration of *devānañ devāyatanañ iva* as given by B. in X. 31 is found.

As a reward for this concentration, one is born among the *viññānañcāyatanañ-paga* gods, where the life-period is limited to 4000 kappas.²

Simile from X. 31

AKINCANNAYATANA-SAMADHI.

Seeing the disadvantages of *viññānañcāyatanañ-samādhi*, the *yogāvacara* proceeds to the next higher *ākiñcaññāyatanañ-samādhi*, which is described as in the passage from Vbh. 245, quoted by B. in X. 36:

Sabbaso viññānañcāyatanañ samatikkamma natthi kiñci ti ākiñcaññāyatanañ upasampajja viharati. X. 36

1. Abhs. p. 23 gives 20,000 kappas as the life-period of these gods.
2. Abhs. p. 23, gives 40,000 kappas.

N.C.

In his explanation of *ākiñcaññāyatana*, Upa. gives a passage corresponding to the quotation from Vbh. 262, given by B. in X. 38. This *saṁādhi* also is further described as: *tivanga-samannāgatam*, *tividha-kalyāṇam*, *dasalakkhaṇa-sampannam*, *bāvīsatigunābhiyuttam*.

As a reward for its attainment, one is born among the *ākiñcaññāyatana* gods, where the life-period is limited to 6000 kappas.¹

NEVASANNANASANNAYATANA-SAMADHI.

The *yogāvacara* proceeds to the next higher *nevasaññānāsaññāyatana-samādhi*, which is described in words that correspond to the quotation from M. ii. 231 given by B. in X. 40:

Saññā rogo saññā gaṇḍo.....etc.

Like B., Upa. comments on the passage quoted from Vibhanga, in Vis. X. 42.

N.C.

This *saṁādhi* also is further described as: *tivanga-samannāgatam*, *tividha-kalyāṇam*, *dasalakkhaṇa-sampannam*, *bāvīsatigunābhiyuttam*.

As a reward for its attainment, one is born among the *neva-saññānāsaññāyatana* gods, where the life-period is limited to 84,000 kappas.²

PAKINNAKAKATHA

General remarks on this topic are made under the following heads:

X. 56-66
q.d.

(i) *Saddanirodha*. A man who enters the first trance cuts off speech, enters the fourth trance and then gradually cuts off breathing in, and breathing out, sound and smell. Here we meet with a sentence: *jhānaṇi samāpannassa saddo kaṇṭako*, which closely corresponds to B.'s *paṭhamam jhānaṇi samāpannassa saddo kaṇṭako ti vutto Bhagavatā* in X. 19.

(ii) *Vipallāsasaññā*.³ He knows the *paṭhavī-saññā* and — knows its characteristics and so has no *vipallāsasaññā*.

1. Cf. Abhs. p. 23, which gives 60,000 kappas as the life-period here.
2. Here Abhs. p. 23 agrees.

3. Upatissa here disposes off the question that may be raised as to why there is no *viparita saññā* when the *yogāvacara* forms *paṭhavī-saññā* about things for which there cannot inherently be any *paṭhavī-saññā*. (*Paṭhavī-kasiṇam samāpanno a-paṭhavī-saññāya paṭhavī-saññam karoti. Evaṁ sati kathām viparita-saññā na hoti?*). His argument, however, is not quite clear.

(iii) *Vuṭṭhānam*. Five causes are mentioned for emerging out of *samādhi*. But if he has entered upon an *arūpāvacara samādhi*, he does not emerge from it for any reason of the multiplicity of objects, for this *samādhi* is *āneñja-vihāra*. If he has entered upon *nirodhasamāpatti*, or upon *phalasamāpatti*, he emerges only as he had previously determined. No other cause can affect him.

(iv) *Samatikkama* [See B. III. 108]¹:

- (a) *anga-samatikkama*, as when one passes from one *rūpāvacara* trance to another.
- (b) *ārammaṇa-samatikkama*, as when one passes from *rūpāvacara samādhi* to *arūpāvacara samādhi*, or from one *arūpāvacara samādhi* to another.
- (v) *Upacāra*. The *upacāra* of all kinds of *samādhis* has five angas.
- (vi) *Vitakka*. *Dutiyajjhānādi-gotrabhū-anantaram avitakkamavicāram*.
- (vii) *Vedanā*. *Catutthajjhānādi-gotrabhū-anantaram upekkhāya uppādo*.
- (viii) *Vicikicchā*. If he has not cut off hindrances, *kāmacchanda* and the rest, he is like one who is afraid of a snake on a tree.
- (xi) *Abhabbā samādhissa uppādanāya*. Four² kinds of people cannot attain any *samādhi*. [Does this correspond very roughly to Vis. V. 40-41?].

V. 40-41
r.a.

Pathavī-kasīnam niṭṭhitam.

2-4. APO-KASINA, TEJO-KASINA, VAYO-KASINA.

Upa. gives the *lakkhaṇa*, *rasa*, etc. in three different sections, one for each of these three *kasiṇas*. Upa. agrees generally with B's. remarks on the preparation of the *kasiṇa*. [Cf. B. V. 3, 5, 6.] He also agrees with B. in saying that a beginner should not practise on natural sheets of water such as ponds, lakes, rivers, ocean, but should practise on water in a bowl or basin, placed in a quiet, solitary place, neither too dark nor having too much light. Upa's. remarks about the two-fold *nimittagahaṇa*

V. 9

1. See p. 39 above.

2. Upa. Does not enumerate which these four are.

[*diṭṭhavasena vā phuṭṭhavasena vā*] of *vāyo-kasiṇa* generally agree with B's. remarks in V. 9-10. Upa. also mentions in the section on *vāyo-kasiṇa* a sugar-cane, a bamboo-grove, or a place where rank, wild grass grows, which comes closer to *uccagga*, *vālagga* quoted from the *Atṭhakathās* by B. in V. 9.

5-8. NILA-KASIṄA, PITA-KASIṄA, LOHITA-KASIṄA,
ODATA-KASIṄA.

V. 12-20

Upa. here also gives the *lakkhana*, *rasa*, etc. The treatment of all these *kasiṇas* is the same except that the flowers, or pieces of cloth, or the colour used are those that correspond to these names. Here also we find the mention of a *maṇḍala* that is circular, quadrilateral or triangular.¹ A beginner should not try to take *nimitta* from natural things, but he should contemplate upon *kasiṇas* that are artificially made from flowers of the colour suitable to each of these *kasiṇas*. The advantages of these *kasiṇas* as given by Upa. substantially correspond to those mentioned by B. in V. 32-35.

Āloka-kasiṇa.

[It is rather strange to find here, the treatment of the *āloka-kasiṇa* as well as that of the next (9b), 'ākāsa not without *rūpa*', although Upa. does not include them in the list of the thirty-eight *kammaṭṭhānas*. It is probably these that he had in his mind when he referred to the two extra ones.²]

V. 21-23

The treatment of this *kasiṇa* also is the same as given in the last four, except that the artificial *kasiṇa* mentioned here is different from that given in Vis. V. 22. Here Upa. says that the *yogāvacara* should sit by the wall of the eastern or western direction, should fill a bowl of water and keep it in a place where the sun shines. From this water where the sun is shining, light will be reflected on the wall. On this [reflected light] he should meditate.

V. 22 dif.

1. See pp. 43-44.

2. See p. 38; Cf. B. V. 21-26.

CHAPTER VIII

行門

[KAMMA-DVARA (?)]

PART THREE

[Bk.6.1.4.—6.21.6 (end of Bk. 6); Tak. 424a—429c. Vis. V. 24-26,
Chaps. VI & VII.]

9. *Ākāsa-kasiṇa.*

Upa. gives here also *takkhaṇa*, *rasa*, etc. He gives this *kasiṇa* as of two kinds:

No such division.

(a) *ākāsa* which is without *rūpa*. [It is this that is no. 9 of the *kasiṇas* according to Upa.]

(b) *ākāsā* not without *rūpa*, as the space in the hollow of a well.¹ [Apparently corresponding to *paricchinnā-ākāsa-kasiṇa* of B.V. 24-26.]

The treatment of the natural or artificial *kasiṇas* roughly agrees with that given by B. in V. 24-25.

10. VINNANA-KASIṄA.

This is *viññāṇākāsa*.

[No details are given of this *kasiṇa*.]

PAKINNAKAKATHĀ.

[The *pakinṇakakathā* as given by Upa. has nothing in common with that given by B. in V. 28-42.]

V. 28-42
q.d.

When the *yogāvacara* has attained mastery over one *nimitta*, he pursues the remaining if he likes. He may attain the four trances in succession. The four *vannakasiṇas* are the best because they accomplish the vimokkhas and because they enable one to reach abhibhāyatanas (除入). Of these, the *odātakasiṇa* is the best, because it creates light. [With this compare B. XIII. 95 where he says: *imesu ca pana tisu āloka-kasiṇam, eva setthaṭqram*.]

1. Taisho ed. 井.

When the mind has attained mastery over the eight *kasiṇas* and eight *samādhis*, gradually, the *appanā* appears.

Upa. gives in this passage several details of acrobatic feats, as it were, in the use of *kasiṇas* and various trances attained with their help, such as going up from the first trance to the *nevasaññānāsaññāyatana*, back from the same to the first, or from the first to the third, then back to the second, and again forward to the fourth, and so on, up to the *nevasaññānāsaññāyatana*. There are several such details. [With this should be compared B. XIII. 1-7. There also we find such acrobatic feats some of which agree with those given by Upa.]

[11-20 ASUBHANI.]

11. UDDHUMATAKA.

Upa. gives as usual the *lakkhaṇa*, *rasa*, etc. He gives nine ānisamāṇas of the *uddhumātaka-saññā*:

- (i) *ajjhattā-kāyagatāsatiyā paṭilābho.*
- (ii) *aniccasāññāya paṭilābho.*
- (iii) *marana-saññāya paṭilābho.*
- (iv) *nibbidā-bahulo.*
- (v) *kāma-vikkhambhanam.*
- (vi) *rūpamadappahānaṇ.*
- (vii) *arogamadappahānaṇ.*
- (viii) *sugati-parāyaṇatā.*
- (ix) *amata-parāyaṇatā.*

Kathām tassa nimittam gaṇhāti?

A whole quotation in
IV. 19-22

A beginner should go alone, without any one else as his companion, as described in detail in the quotation from some older source, given in B.VI.19-22.

[It is remarkable to find the whole of this long passage ascribed by B. to the *Āṭhakathās* (*Āṭhakathāsu vuttena vidhīnā*, VI.18) given here by Upa. One should be surprised to find such close similarity in thought and words and one cannot attribute it to a mere accident.]

Upa. also comments on this passage and his comment generally agrees with that of B., except in that on the words *lingato*, *samantato* and except that he says *dasavidhena nimittaggāho* instead of *ekādasavidhena nimittaggāho* of B.VI.58.

In his comment on the word *lingato*, Upa. says that the *yogāvacara* may note whether the bloated body is that of a man or woman, or of one who is old or young, or whether it is long or short, and so on, although later he says [6.8a.10] that a beginner with many kilesas should not take a *nimitta* from an object that is disagreeable (*vi-sabhāga*), which he explains as 'a woman's body to a man'. [Cf. B.VI.42=*purisassa itthi-sarīram*.]

The comment on *samantato* differs entirely from that of B. in VI. 49.

Upa. has only ten ways because he takes *ninnato* and *thalato* together and not separately as B. does [VI.47-48.] Besides, Upa. comments on several other expressions of this passage on which B. does not comment.

In this section Upa. treats the subject-matter covered in VI. 50-68 and VI.86-87. Upa. also raises the point discussed by B. in VI.86, as to why only the first trance is possible on the asubhas and his answer is essentially the same as given by B. in VI. 86-87. We do not, however, find the simile of a boat rendered stable by an *aritta*, given by B. in VI. 86 to illustrate his explanation. Upa. also does not go into the details of the whole subject as B. does.

12. VINILAKA
13. VIPUBBAKA
14. VICCHIDDKA
15. VIKKHAYITAKA
16. VIKKHITTAKA
17. HATAVIKKHIT-TAKA
18. LOHITAKA
19. PULUVAKA
20. ATTTHIKA

The treatment of these asubhas is brief VI. 70-80 and almost similar. Upa. gives as usual the *lakkhana*, *rasa*, etc. The *ānisamsas* of all are the same as those of the *uddhumātaka*. Even the mode of taking *nimitta* is the same except in *vicchiddaka* and *vikkhittaka*, where it roughly agrees with what B. says in VI.72,74. The explanation of these names of the asubhas is much different from that of B. in VI. 1-10 and VI. 70-74. The quotation from D.ii.296 alluded to by B. in VI. 78 is given here in detail. About the last *asubha*, *attthika*, Upa. like B. [VI. 80] says that the *kammaṭṭhāna* is successful even if there is one bone, as when there is a skeleton of bones, for an object of meditation.

PAKINNAKAKATHA

A beginner with many kilesas should not take *nimitta* from an object that is disagreeable (*vi-sabha*), which is explained as 'a woman's body to a man'. Upa. raises the question as to why the asubhas are just ten, neither more nor less. In his answer, among other things, he says: Because when the body is dead, it can be only of ten kinds and because in as much as there are [only] ten kinds of men [which are given in detail by B. in VI. 85], there are ten kinds of *saññānimitta*.

Upa. closes this section, saying, with reasons, that the *asubha* should not be developed. He gives a quotation from the *Abhidhamma*, and a *gāthā* from *Tā-te-shi-kyu-phu* (大德狗父), *Bhadanta Sigālapitā*¹, which exactly corresponds to stanza 18 from *Theragāthā* from which only the second line is quoted by *Buddhaghosa* in III. 111.

[21-30 ANUSSATIYO]

21. BUDDHANUSSATI.

VII. 1-67

Upa., while explaining the word *Buddhānussati*, comments on the word *Buddha*. His comment is almost word for word the same as given in Ps.i.74, para. 28, (first sub-para.), beginning with the words: *Yo so Bhagarā sayambhū anācariyako.....* etc. B. refers in VII. 52 to the next sub-para. only of Ps. beginning with the words: *Bujjhitā saccānī ti Buddho*, and so on.

Upa. as usual gives the *lakkhana*, *rasa*, etc. and gives eighteen advantages, many of which are the same as given by B. in VII.67. In the same connection, he refers to a sentence from *Shiu-to-lo-nieh-ti-li-chu* (修多羅涅底里旬) *Netrī-pada-sūtra* (?)² which says, 'If a man desires to reflect upon the Buddha, he is worthy to be revered like a place with the image of the Buddha'. [6.10.6; Tak. 426c.7.] [With this compare B. VII.67: *Buddhaguṇānussatiyā ajjhāvuttham c'assa sarīram*

1. Cf. B. III. 111 which quotes the second line from the following stanza ascribed to *Thera Singāla-pitā*:

*Ahu Buddhassa dāyādo bhikkhu bhesakalāvane
kevalam aṭṭhisapñāya aphari pathavim imam
maññe'ham kāmarāgam so khippam eva pahiyati ti*
(*Thera-gāthā* I. 18)

2. See also p. 72. Cf. *Netripada-Sāstra* of *Upagupta* [Abhk. ii. 205]

pi cetiyagharam iva pūjāraham hoti, which comes quite close to the sentence referred to above.]

The *yogāvacara* should reflect upon the Buddha in this way:

Bhagavā araham sammāsambuddho vijjācarāna-sampanno VIII. 2 sugato lokavidū anuttaro purisadammasārathī satthā deva-manussānām. It will be noticed that this is substantially the same as the passage given by B. in VII.2 and on which he bases his own exposition.

Upa. comments on this whole passage. His comment sometimes agrees with that of B. and sometimes it does not. It is very simple and there is nothing corresponding to the artificial and scholastic interpretation of the word *Bhagavā* as given by B. in VII.54-64. While commenting on the word *vijjācarāna-sampanno*, Upa. gives in full the explanation of *vijjā* and *carāna*, as given in the Bhayabherava¹ and the Ambatthā² suttas, while B. merely refers to it. While commenting on the word *lokavidū*, Upa. speaks of only two lokas, *sattaloka* and *sankhāraloka*, and even their explanation is altogether different from B.'s interpretation of these words. [VII.38,39]

* * * * *

[Now follows a section to which B. has nothing corresponding in the chapter on 'Cha Anussatiniddesa'. But later in IX.25-35, he has something which corresponds only in a general spirit to this section of Upa. The details are quite different.]

The *yogāvacara* should reflect upon the *Tathāgata* in four ways:

(i) By reflecting upon the preparation made by the Buddha in his past lives, before he became the Buddha (i. e. while he was a Bodhisatta). During the long period of twenty-four *asankheyya* kappas, and one hundred ayutas³, i.e. since the time when the Bodhisatta expressed his aspiration (*pañidhāna*) to become the Buddha until his last life, the Buddha, not being satisfied with special religious distinctions he had attained,

1. Majjhima, 4th Sutta.

2. Digha, 3rd Sutta.

3. Cf. Vis. IX. 26: *Satthā pubbeva sambodhā anabhisambuddho bodhisatto pi samāno cattāri asankheyyāni kappasatasahasrañ ca pāramiyo pūrayamāno.* Also Jā. vol. i. 3, Buddhavāmsa, p. 6, which both read: *Kappe ca satasahasre ca catuñ ca asankhiye.*

Expl.
often
diff.

VII. 38, 39
diff.

IX. 25-35
diff.

was always working for others, trying to save them. He practised the pāramitās¹ of *dāna*, *sīla*, *nekkhamma*, *khanti*, *sacca*, *adhitṭhāna*, *mettā*, *upekkhā*, *viriya* and *paññā*. Upa. refers to various stories which illustrate the pāramitās practised by the Buddha, while he was a Bodhisatta. Among these stories, the following can be traced:

The stories of *Sasajātaka* (*Cariyāpiṭaka* I. 10, p. 82; *Jā.* iii. 51-56), of *Mahā-Govinda* (D. ii. 220-252, *sutta* no. xix) *Saccasavhaya* (? *Cariyāpiṭaka* III. 7, p. 97), *Mūgapakkha* (*Cariyāpiṭaka* III.6, p. 96-97), *Lomahāmsa-jātaka* (*Jā.* i. 389-91), *Setṭhi-jātaka*², of *Dīghāvu* (*Vin.* i. 342-349, *Chap. x.*), *Chaddanta-jātaka* (*Jā.* v. 36-57), *Valāhassa* (*Jā.* ii. 127-130), *Nigrodhamiga* (*Jā.* i. 145-153), *Mahākapi* (*Jā.* iii. 369ff., no. 407). The story of *Mahākapi* referred to by B. in IX.31 is the story³ from *Jā.* v. 67-74 and is also referred to by Upa.

In this way the *yogāvacara* should reflect upon the virtues practised by the Buddha in his past lives.

N.C.

(ii) By reflecting as to how the Blessed one pulled himself out [of the mire of this world.]

The *yogāvacara* reflects how the Buddha [while he was still a Bodhisatta] left his wife and child, father, mother & other relatives, and in search of the peaceful *nibbāndha*⁴ went to Magadha country, crossed the Nerañjarā river, went to the Bodhi tree, defeated *Māra* and his army. In the first part of the night, he recalled his past life, in the middle he attained the Divine Eye, and in the last he destroyed *samudaya* (*tañhā*), reached the immortal state (*amatadhātu*), cultivated the eight angas of the Right Path and experienced the destruction of the *āsavas*.

1. Cf. *Mvy.* 914-923 where ten pāramitās are mentioned, but the list does not agree with this in all its constituents. Also see B.D. p. 167-168. Also Cf. the list in *Chin. Dhs.* (V.) pp. 24, 121 which agrees with the list in *Mvy.*

2. For the Chinese characters for this word see *Mvy.* 3708. See *Jātakamālā*, stories nos. 4, 20; also no. 5 for *Aviśaya Śresthi-jātaka*. See *Jātakamālā* in the Chinese version, Nanjio, 1312.

3. P.T.S. edition of the *Vis.* i. p. 303 refers inadvertently to *Jā.* iii. 369ff.

(iii) By reflecting upon the *dhammavisesas*¹ [*kalyāṇa-dhammā* of B. IX. 124] attained by the Buddha.

(a) *Dasa Tathāgatabalāni*: the same as given in M. i. N.C. 69-71.

(b) *Catuddasa Buddhañāṇapaññā*: the last fourteen N.C. ñāṇas of the seventy-three ñāṇas given in Ps. at the end of the *Mātikā* [Ps. i. 3.]

(c) *Atṭhārasa Buddhadhammā*²: N.C.

1. *Atitamse Buddhassa Bhagavato appaṭihatañāṇam*.
2. *Anāgatamse* ,, ,, ,,
3. *Paccuppan-*
naṃse ,, ,, ,,
4. *Sabbam kāyakammaṇi* ñāṇapubbangamam
ñāṇāṇuparivattam.
5. *Sabbam vacikammaṇi* ,, ,,
6. *Sabbam manokammaṇi* ,, ,,
7. *Natthi chandassā hāni*.
8. *Natthi viriyassā hāni*.
9. *Natthi satiyā hāni*.
10. *Natthi samādhissa hāni*.
11. *Natthi paññāya hāni*.
12. *Natthi vimuttiyā hāni*.
13. *Natthi dvedhāyitattam*.
14. *Natthi ravā*.
15. *Natthi [kiñci] apphuṭam* [ñāṇena.]
16. *Natthi dāvā*.
17. *Natthi byāvaṭamano*.
18. *Natthi appaṭisankhāṇuppekkhā*.

(d) *Cattāri vesārajjāni*, *cattāri satipaṭṭhānāni*, *cattāri sammappadhānāni*, *cattāro iddhipādā*, *pañca indriyāni*, *pañca balāni*, *cha abhiññā*, *satta sambojjhangāni*, *atthangiko maggo*, *atṭha abhi-*

These last
six are ex-
plained by
Upa.

1. Cf. Vis. 1X. 124: *Evaṁ pāramiyo pīṭetvā yāva dasabala-catuvesāraja-cha-asādhāraṇañāna-āṭṭhāra-Buddhadhammappabheda sabbe pi kalyānadhamme paripūrenti.* B. does not enumerate them. Also cf. Vis. Ganṭhi (towards the end of Chap. IX) which gives only six asādhāraṇañānas and eighteen Buddhadhammas; Mvy. 119-129, 131-134, 136-153.

2. This list is also given in Vis. *Ganṭhi* towards the end of the comment on Chap. IX. Also cf. Mvy. 135-153; Chinese *Dharmasangraha*, *Asṭādaśīvenikā dharmāḥ*, XLI (pp. 34 & 119). The wording in the latter is quite different.

bhāyatanāni, aṭṭha vimokkhā, nava anupubbasamāpattiyo, dasa ariyavāsā, dasa āsavakkhayabalāni, avasesā ca anekā kusaladhammā.

N.C.

(iv) By reflecting that the Blessed One did a great good to the world, that he, having compassion upon the people, turned the Wheel of the Law, opened the gates of deathlessness (*amatadvāra*), that he made innumerable gods and men reach the *sāmaññāphala*, that by the three¹ kinds of miracles (*pāṭihāriya*) he made the people entertain faith, opened the sugatis, preached the Pātimokkha and so on.

By reflecting in these four ways, the mind of the *yogāvacara* attains faith, becomes free from distraction, and the jhānangas arise.

Upa. agrees with B. VII, 66. in saying that by this reflection upon the Buddha, the mind does not reach *appanā* but only *upacāra*.

Upa. concludes this section with a remark, "Further it is said [by some] that by reflecting upon the Buddha even the fourth trance is reached."

VII. 68-88 22. DHAMMANUSSATI.

B. does not give any comment on the word *Dhamma*. Upa's. comment on the same word is worth noting. Here it is:

N.C.

Dhammo ti nibbānam, nibbānagāminī paṭipadā ca.

Kā nibbānagāminī paṭipadā? Cattāro satipaṭṭhānā, cattāro sammappadhānā, cattāro iddhipādā, pañca indriyāni, pañca balāni, satta sambojjhangāni, aṭṭha sammā maggangāni, ayam vuccati nibbānagāminī paṭipadā.²

Kim nibbānam?

N.C.

Sabbasankhārasamatho, sabbūpadhi-patiṇissaggo, taṇhakkhayo, virāgo, nirodho, nibbānam.³

Upa. as usual gives the *lakkhaṇa*, *rasa*, etc. He mentions *dhammavicaya* as its *rasa*. The ānisāmsas are the same as those of *Buddhānussati*.

1. See D. i. 212 (11th sutta, para. 3), Mvy. 231-34.

2. This corresponds to *sattatimsa bodhipakkhiyadhammā* of B. XXII. 33-39.

3. This is identical with the passage on *nibbānam* in S. i. 136, A. ii. 118.

Upa. like B. takes the following text for the exposition of the subject:

Svākkhāto Bhagavatā dhammo sanditṭhiko akāliko ehipasiko paccattam veditabbo viññūhi.

VII. 68.

The comment on the words of this passage is in many places different. For instance, the comment on the word *sanditṭhiko* is: *maggānañ ca phalānañ ca anupubbādhigamattā, nibbānassa ca maggaphalānañ ca sacchikiriyāya sanditṭhiko*, which is quite different from B.'s comment on that word given in VII. 76-79. Similarly the comment on the words: *ehipassiko paccattam veditabbo viññūhi* is different although the words corresponding to B.'s *ehi passa* are met with here.

Expl.
often diff.

Upa. goes into several other details as to how one should reflect upon the *Dhamma*.

When the *yogāvacara* thus reflects in this way, his mind develops faith, becomes free from distraction, destroys hindrances, and the factors of trance gradually arise in him and the *upacāra-samādhi* is reached.

The rest is as has already been said in the *Buddhānussati*.

23. SANGHĀNUSSATI.

Upa., as usual, explains the word *sangha* and gives the *lakkhana*, *rasa*, etc. As a text for his exposition, Upa. takes a passage which is almost the same as is quoted in VII. 89 by B. from A. iii. 286:

VII. 89-100

Supaṭipanno Bhagavato sāvakasangho, ujupaṭipanno..... anuttaram puññakkhettam lokassa.

The comment generally agrees with that of B. although, here and there, it differs. Upa.'s interpretations of the word *supaṭipanna* are many more than that of B. The comment on *āhuṇeyyo*, *pāhuṇeyyo* is very concise.

24-26. SILANUSSATI, CAGANUSSATI, DEVATANUSSATI.

Upa. explains these terms and gives their *lakkhana*, *rasa*, etc. The texts taken for their exposition are the same passages from A. iii. 286-87 as are quoted by B. in VII. 101, 107, 115, respectively. Upa. gives no comment on the last two passages and even in his comment on the first, Upa. differs considerably from B. • The latter is more prolix and scholastic.

VII. 101-118

N.C.

At the end of the section on *Devatānussati* a point is raised as to why we should reflect upon the merits of gods and not upon the merits of men. Upa.'s answer is, "because the merits of gods are superior, lead to superior heavens and excellent states. By dwelling upon excellent states, one's mind becomes excellent. So we should reflect upon the merits of gods and not upon those of men."

The rest is as is said before.

CHAPTER VIII

行門

[KAMMA-DVĀRA (?)]

PART FOUR

[Bk. 7.1.4—7.19a.9; Tak. 429c—435a. Cf. Vis. VIII.145-244.]

27. ANĀPĀNASATI.

[This whole section has many passages closely similar to the corresponding portion of the Vis., namely VIII. 145-244. In the first place it is to be noted that Upa. takes this section before the sections on *maraṇasati* and *kāyagatāsati*, which even according to the order in which they are mentioned in the chapter on *kammaṭṭhāna*,¹ precede *ānāpānasati*. Another thing to be noted is that in this section Upa. uses throughout the words *ān-phān* 安般 the Chinese transliteration of the word *ānāpāna* although he has used 數息 above, in the list given in the chapter on *kammaṭṭhanas* (p. 38, Vim. 3.6a.6.)]

As usual, Upa. explains the word *ānāpāna* and gives the *lakkhaṇa*, *rasa*, etc. While giving the ānisāṃsas, he mentions several, which are given in B. in VIII.238-244., particularly the passage from M.iii.82 quoted in VIII.239. The words *cattāri satipaṭṭhāne paripūreti.....[vijjā]²-vimuttim paripūreti* are found word for word.

The cultivation of this reflection is described substantially in the same words from S. v.322 quoted by B. in VIII.145: *Idha, bhikkhave, bhikkhu araññagato vā rukkhamūlagato vā... paṭinissaggānupassi passasissāmī ti sikkhati.*

While commenting on the first part of the passage, Upa. like B. goes into many details of the practice of breathing, as to how one should direct one's attention to the tip of the nose or the [upper] part of the lip, and that one should note the breathings only as they *touch* the body and *not* before or after. The

1. See p. 38.

2. This word though dropped here [7.1a.1] is given later in the text [7.7.8].

quotation from Ps.i.165 given by B. in VIII.197 is given by Upa. in an abridged form in 7.2.8-9. So also, the simile of a saw (*kakaca*) given by B. in VIII.201-202 is given by Upa. in 7.2.5-6 in an abridged form.

VIII. 214-15

When the *yogāvacara* has purified his mind from nine¹ upakkilesas the *paṭibhāga-nimitta* appears. Regarding the appearance of this *nimitta*, we find a very interesting passage, which corresponds to B.'s statement [VIII.214] : *tūlapicu viya, vātadhārā viya ca upaṭṭhātī ti ekacce² āhu*. Upa. also further refers to the appearance of the *nimitta* as *dhūmasikhā, valāhaka-paṭala*, and as what corresponds to *pāmanga-sutta* and *dāru-sārasūci* of B.VIII.215.

Gradually, by practising this breathing, one's mind becomes free from *nīvaraṇas*, and the trance is attained. All the rest has been already described in detail.

And again, former teachers have mentioned four³ ways of cultivating *ānāpānasati*:

VIII. 190

(i) *Gaṇanā*: to count numbers from one to ten and not beyond ten; or to count from one to five and not beyond five. [Cf. B.VIII.190.]

VIII. 196

(ii) *Anubandhanā*: explained in exactly the same words as are used by B. in VIII.196: *anubandhanā nāma gaṇanām paṭisamharitvā satiyā nirantaram assāsānam anugamanām*.

(iii) *Thapanā*: to direct the attention to the point where the wind of the breath touches the tip of the nose or the lip.

(iv) *Sallakkhaṇā*: to reflect upon the *nimitta* and produce from this *pīti, sukha* and other dhammas.

Upa. also gives another alternative interpretation of all these four words.

VIII. 173

While commenting on the word *sikkhati*, Upa. refers to the three *sikkhās*, *adhiṣṭasikkhā, adhicittasikkhā, adhipaññāsikkhā* and gives a passage which is identical with B.'s passage [VIII.173]: *yo vā tathābhūtassa samvaro,.....bahulikaroti.*

In his comment on *passambhayām kāyasankhāram assasissmi*etc., Upa. following *Paṭisambhidā* explains *kāyasankhāra* as

1. Upa. does not tell us which these nine are.
2. Dhammapāla commenting on the word *ekacce* simply says: *eke ācariyā* [Burmese edition p. 305.]
3. Cf. B. VIII. 189 where eight are mentioned.

assāsapassāsa. We can also trace in Upa. a passage that corresponds to the synonymous words *ānamanā*, *vinamanā*....etc. given by B. in VIII.181 as quoted from Ps.i.184-86.

In his comment on *pītīpātīsañvedī*, Upa. uses words which correspond to B.'s *dvīhi ākārehi pīti pātīsañviditā hoti: ārammañpato ca asammohato ca*. [VIII.226.]

Upa.'s comment on *cittasankhārapātīsañvedī*, *assasissāmī ti ...passambhayam cittasankhāram* roughly agrees with that given by B. in VIII.229-30. But that on *cittapātīsañvedī*, *abhipamodayam cittam*, *samādaham cittam* has nothing corresponding to B., while that on *vimocayam cittam* differs considerably from B.'s comment.

Upa., while commenting on *vimocayam cittam* says that if the *yogāvacara* while practising the inhaling or exhaling finds his mind dull, he frees it from dulness; if he finds it distracted, he frees it from distraction; if he finds it elated, he frees it from *rāga*; if he finds it low in spirits, he frees it from hatred (*dosa*); if he finds it impure, he frees it from *upakkilesas*. Further if he finds that his mind does not take delight in the *ārammañpa*, he makes it take delight in it. [When we compare this comment with that given by B. in VIII.233, we find that B.'s comment is more artificial and scholastic, while that of Upa. is much simpler and more natural.]

The comment on *aniccānupassi*.....*pañinissaggānupassi assasissāmi* also differs considerably from that of B. (VIII. 234-36.)

Of these sixteen ways of cultivating the *ānāpānasati* (as expressed in the quotation which forms the basis for the whole exposition of this subject), Upa. agrees with B. [VIII.237] in saying that the first twelve constitute *sañatha* and *vipassanā*, while the last only *vipassanā*.

Upa. again gives the passage from M.iii.82, quoted by B. in VIII.239, showing how the cultivation of *ānāpānasati* fulfills the four *satipātīhānas*.....the cultivation of the seven factors of enlightenment (*sambojjhangāni*) fulfills *vijjāvimutti*.

Upa. makes another important remark that by cultivating the seven factors of enlightenment, *vijjā* is perfected at the moment of reaching the Path, while the *vimutti* is perfected at the moment of the attainment of the Fruit.

A point is raised as to why this *ānāpānasati* is called *vitakka-upaccheda*. The answer roughly corresponds to B.'s VIII.238. There is, however, in addition an interesting simile of a

VIII. 181

VIII. 228

VIII. 229-30
r.a.VIII. 233
q.d.VIII.
234-36
diff.

VIII. 237

VIII. 239

VIII. 238
r.a.

gandhabba who hearing any sound runs after it. *Vitakka*, like a *gandhabba*, runs after objects and therefore ought to be banished.¹ *Vitakka-upaccheda* is also illustrated by the attentive state of the mind of a man who is walking on a [narrow] embankment.

VIII. 1-41

28. MARĀNASATI. [Bk. 7.8.6—7.11a.9; Tak. 431c-432c. Cf. Vis. VIII.1-41.]

VIII. 41

Upa. defines the word *marāna* as *āyusankhārassa upacchedo*² and gives as usual the *lakkhaṇa*, *rasa*, etc. He gives ānisāsas many of which are the same in sense—though different in expressions—as those given by B. in VIII.41.

While speaking of the way of cultivating the practice of *marānasati*, Upa. says that a man should always think of the death of other beings and reflect that, like others, he also is subject to death, and has not gone beyond it. In this connection Upa. refers to Nieh-ti-li-po-tho-shiu-to-lo 涅底履波陀修多羅³ which says: “If a man wants to reflect upon death, he should reflect upon a dead person and see the cause of his death.”

N.C.

This reflection upon death is of four kinds:

- (i) With sorrow, as when one's beloved child dies.
- (ii) With surprise, as when a child all of a sudden dies.
- (iii) With indifference as when a corpse-burner (*chavādāhaka*) looks at a lifeless body.
- (iv) With insight (*ñāṇa* 智)—To consider all things as impermanent and to produce disgust for worldly things (*nibbida*).

Out of these, the *yogāvacara* should cultivate the last.

Death is of three kinds:

N.C.

- (i) *Sādhāraṇa-marāna* [等死], to which all living beings are subject.
- (ii) *Samuccheda-marāna*, as that of the kilesas destroyed by an Arhat.
- (iii) *Khaṇika-marāna*, that of the sankhāras which cease to exist every moment.

N.C.

Also, it is of two kinds:

- (i) *Akālika*: If a man dies before he reaches the middle age, either because of his own effort, or because of others, because of disease or without any cause.

1. That is how I interpret it. It is, however, liable to a different interpretation with different punctuation.

2. Cf. Vis. VIII. 1: *ekabhavapriyāpannassa jivitindriyassa upacchedo*.

3. 7.8a.4; Tak. 431c.22-23. See p. 62 above.

(ii) *Kālika* : If a man dies, because life has come to an end, or because of old age.

On both of these the *yogāvacara* should reflect.

Moreover, former teachers have prescribed eight ways of reflecting upon death: [B. also gives eight, which are mostly the same except nos. ii & vii below].

VIII. 8

(i) *Vadhakapaccupatthānato*. One should think that one is being pursued by death just as a man who is being led to the post of execution always sees that he is being followed by the executioner. [With this compare B. VIII.9-13, where B. is more elaborate and gives many more illustrations.]

VIII. 9-13

(ii) *Akāraṇato*. Without any cause or means that would prevent death from coming; just as when the sun and the moon arise there is nothing to prevent them from setting.

N.C.

(iii) 以本取, by referring to persons of the past time. [This corresponds to B.'s *upasaṃharaṇato* VIII.16-24.] The great personages mentioned here below have all died:

VIII. 16-24

(a) Great kings like Mahāsudassana and 頂生¹ [B.VIII.17].

VIII. 17

(b) Great personages with miraculous powers like Vessāmitta and Yamataggi (闍摩達梨)² who could emit fire and water from their body.

diff.

(c) Great disciples like Sāriputta and Moggallāna. [B.VIII.21].

VIII. 21

(d) Paccekabuddhas.

VIII. 22

(e) Tathāgatas.

VIII. 23

1. Mvy. 3557 gives Murdhataḥ (Murdhajātāḥ?) corresponding to Tibetan Spyi-bo-Skyes སྙྩ སྙྩ སྙྩ which is explained by S. C. Das in his Tibetan Dictionary p. 807 as 'an epithet of King Māndhātā, a legendary ancestor of Gautama Buddha.' Apte's Dictionary gives the following information about Māndhātṛ—Name of a king of the Solar race, son of Yuvanāśva (being born from his own belly). As soon as he came out of his own belly, the sages said: *kaṇṭ eṣa dhāsyati*, whereupon Indra came down and said: *māṇ dhāsyati*. The boy was therefore called Māndhātṛ.

2. For these names see D. i. 104, 238-43; A. iv. 61.

VIII. 25-26 (iv) *Kāyabahusādhāraṇato*. [Cf. B.VIII.25-26.] That the possession of the body is considered to be shared with others like *vāta*, *semha*, worms, food and drink not properly digested, poisonous serpents, centipedes, lions, tigers, leopards, dragons, oxen; because when attacked by them the body succumbs.

[A part of the quotation from A.iii.36 given by B. in VIII.26 is clearly traced in this passage.]

VIII. 27-28 (v) *Ayudubbalato*. [Slightly different from B.VIII. 27-28.] The life of beings is weak for two reasons:

(a) Because the place or the abode (referring thereby to the body) is too weak, unreal, unsubstantial, like a bubble, or foam of water.

(b) Because the *nissaya* (依) on which it depends is weak. We find in almost similar words, though in a different order, the words in the passage given by B. in VIII.27, beginning with the words *assāsapassāsūpanibaddham*.

VIII. 34-38 (vi) *Addhānaparicchedato*. [Cf. B.VIII. 34-38.] It is interesting to note that Upa. also says here that from times ancient, people have come into existence [and gone]. Now no one lives past hundred years. [B. in the same connection limits the period of time to *present* days by adding the word *etarahi*.]

[The long passage from A.iii.305-06, quoted by B. in VIII. 36-37 appears here in a slightly abridged form.]

VIII. 24-33 (q.d.) (vii) *Animittato*. Because it has no *nimitta* there is no fixed time. [? Not quite clear.]

(viii) *Khanato*. Upa. refers to a passage from the Abhidhamma, which corresponds to that quoted by B. in VIII.39.¹ Excepting the second verse of the three verses and the last quarter of the third, the whole passage is the same.

In this way *nibbida* is produced, mind becomes free from distraction, and the trance is reached.

A small paragraph is added about the distinction between *aniccasaññā* and *maraṇasati*.

1. This passage is traced to Nd.1.42.

Aniccasanñā has, for its object, the coming into and passing out of existence of the khandhas, while *maranasati* concerns itself with the disintegration of the indriyas. By the cultivation of the *aniccasanñā* and *anattasanñā*, one removes pride and egoism, while, by the cultivation of the *maranasati*, *aniccasanñā* and *dukkhasanñā* become firmly established. N.C.

By the cessation of life mind ceases [to exist.]

Maranasati niṭhitā.

29. KAYAGATASATI.

Upa. as usual gives the explanation of the word *kāyagatāsati* as reflecting on the nature of the body and also gives the *lakkhaṇa*, *rasa*, etc. He gives the ānisāṃsas many of which correspond to those given by B. in VIII.144. Upa. also includes among them *aniccasanñā*, *anattasanñā*, *asubhasanñā* and *ādīnavasaññā*. When Upa. comes to the text giving the method of cultivating this reflection, he gives the same list of the thirty-two parts of the body as is quoted from M.iii.90 in Vis. VIII.44.

VIII. 144
p.a.

VIII. 44
id.

Upa. gives those different ways of reflecting upon this text as are given by B. in VIII.48. He also adds that a *dosacarita* should reflect upon the *vaṇṇa*, a *rāgacarita* upon the disgusting nature [of the body], and a *paññācarita* on the dhātus. In this way he produces the *nimitta*.

VIII. 48

Further he should reflect upon the nature of the body in the following thirteen ways: N.C.

(i) *Bijato*. As from a poisonous seed are produced different kinds of grass, such as *kusa*, so this body is produced from the impurities of the father and mother and so it becomes impure. N.C.

(ii) *Thānato*. This body is not produced from among flowers, or lotuses, but in the narrow place of the womb, which is an abode of many stinking impurities. This corresponds to B.'s description of the womb from which a person is born, as given in Vis. XVI.37.

(iii) *Paccayato*. This body, however taken care of, will never be regarded as precious like gold, silver, pearls, etc. or like *candana* or *tagara* and so on; because it receives its nourishment from the impurities in the womb of the mother.

(iv) *Nissandato*. Like a bag full of feses and urine, this body is always leaking through the nine openings. XI. 22-23
p.a.

N.C.

(v)

[With this compare B.XI.22-23, especially the last quarter of the stanza in para. 23, *navadvārehi sandati*.]

以次第形. The form in successive times. Upa. refers to the first four stages of the growth of the foetus by the names of *kalala*, *abbuda*, *pesi*, *ghana*, and further traces the growth of the foetus from week to week up to forty-two weeks¹ when the child is born. In the twenty-ninth week the body is equipped with all the limbs. Upa. also agrees with B.'s *navanvutiyā lomakūpasahassehi* [B.VI.89.]

N.C.

(vi) *Kimikulato*. Upa. refers to eighty thousand² kimi-kulas, while B. mentions only eighty. [VIII.25.] It is interesting to note that Upa. gives a long list of the names of different worms residing in different parts of the body.³ They seem to be all transliterations of Indian names. For instance, a name like *muñalamukha* can be traced here.

XI. 56

(vii) 以安. How one bone is placed in relation to the other. This agrees with B.XI.55.

VIII. 101
s.d.

(viii) *Kalāpato*. This is in substantial agreement with B.VIII.101 except that according to B. there are three hundred bones in the human body excluding the thirty-two teeth, while according to Upa. there are three hundred including the thirty-two teeth.

VI. 90
r.a.

(ix) *Jigucchanato*. (x) *Asubhato*. } [Both these paragraphs roughly correspond to B. VI.90.] However one may try to decorate the body with good clothing or by smearing it with scents, it never gives up its character of being impure.

1. For details see my article 'Unidentified Sources of the Vimuttimagga' published in the Annals of the Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute, Poona, vol. XV, parts III-IV (1934) p. 211. Also see Appendix A.

2. See Šik. p. 81: *aśitīm krimikulasahasrāṇi yāni tiṣṭhanti antare*; p. 129: *santi asmin kāye aśitīk krimikulasahasrāṇi*.

The names in this list of worms do not agree with the list found in the Atharva-veda, Bk. II. hymns 31-32, Bk. V. hymn 33, nor with the list found in Indian medical works like Aṣṭāṅga-hṛdaya, Suśuta, Caraka, etc.

3. See Appendix A where I am re-producing, with the necessary corrections, a substantial part of the article referred to above in note 1.

(xi) *Nidhānato*. It is the seat of many diseases and there are innumerable dangers (*ananta-ādīnavā*) in the body.

(xii) *Akataññuto*. It is like an ungrateful relative. Howsoever one may take care of the body by feeding it with the most delicious food, it is sure to leave one and go towards old age and death.

(xiii) *Sa-pariyantato*. It is sure to come to an end either by being cremated or buried, eaten up, destroyed, or disintegrated.

When the *yogāvacara* has thus reflected on the nature of the body, his mind becomes free from distraction, the *nīvaranās* vanish and the factors of trance arise.

[The whole of this section on *Kāyagatāsati* differs widely from that in Vis. Upa. does not go into the detailed explanation of the thirty-two parts of the body. But he gives a detailed list of the names of different worms inhabiting the different parts of the body.]

30. UPASAMANUSSATI.

Upa. explains the word *upasama* as *kāyacittānam iñjana-vipphandana-nirodha*. He also gives as usual the *lakkhaṇa*, *rasa*, etc.

When he comes to the *ānisamsas*, he gives exactly the same as are given by B. in Vis. VIII.251. The method of cultivating this reflection is to think upon the *ānisamsas*. We do not here find the passage taken by B. as a text for his exposition. It is a great fortune to see, or hear the Law from, a monk who is described as *sīlasampanno*, *samādhisampanno*, *paññāsampanno*, *vimuttisampanno*, *vimuttiñāṇadassanasampanno*. In this reflection, if a man attains the first trance, he reflects upon that aspect of the trance which has been abandoned by him (*pahānanga*), that is to say, the *nīvaranās*; in the second trance on the *vitakka* and *vicāra*, and so on, up to *saññā-vedayitanirodha*. So also if he has reached the *Sotāpatti-phala* he thinks upon the cessation of some kilesas; if he has attained the Second Fruit, he thinks upon the cessation of the *olārika-kāmarāgapatiḍghā* and so on. When he reaches Arhatship, he thinks of all the kilesas which he has destroyed. When he attains *nibbāna* he thinks of the cessation of all things by *upasamānussati*.

Diff.

VIII. 251

N.C.

In this way he produces faith, has his mind free from distraction, destroys nivaraṇas and the trance-factors appear. He attains the *upacārasamādhi*.

PAKINṄNAKAKATHA.

Upa. adds *pakinṄnakakathā* in which he gives a summary in a sentence each of the mode of cultivating the first six anussatis.

PART FIVE

[31-34 APPAMANNA]

[Bk. 8.1.5—8.23.5; Tak. 435a—439a. Cf. Vis. Chaps. IX & XI]

31. METTA. [Bk. 8.1.5—8.8a.10; Tak. 435a.—1437. Cf. B.IXth Chapter.]

Upa. explains the word *mettā* in this way. Just as father and mother have affection for their only child, have always friendly feelings for it, and have the good of the child at their heart, so one should love all beings and desire their welfare. This is *mettā*.¹ He also gives the *lakkhaṇa*, *rasa*, etc. He mentions eleven ānisamsas which are exactly the same as are given in the quotation from A.v.342 given by B. in IX.37.

IX. 37

Before one starts the cultivation of this *mettā*, one should first see the disadvantages in ill-will (*dosa*) and the advantages in forbearance (*khanti*). [Cf. Vis. IX.1.]. Unlike B. who merely refers to some passages giving the disadvantages and advantages, Upa. goes into all the details of these, showing how one should see the disadvantages of *dosa* and advantages of *khanti*. He refers to the simile of a saw (*kakaca*) referred to by B. in IX.15, and further gives some beautiful similes to illustrate how, if one goes on cherishing ill-will, one would be like

N.C.

- (i) a man who wishes to take a bath but enters unclean and impure [water].
- (ii) a physician himself suffering from a disease.
- (iii) a painted vase full of impurity but still uncovered.
- (iv) a man who eats poisoned food deliberately.
- (v) a man who does not use, even when bitten by a serpent, the antidote against poison which he carries in his hand.

Upa. also gives the details of the advantages of *khanti*.

He agrees with B. in saying that when one starts cultivating *mettā*, one should not start with an enemy or a neutral

1. Cf. Sn. stanzas 149-150.

person but with oneself. Then gradually he should proceed to one who is dear, one who is neutral and lastly an enemy. It is interesting to note that while Upa. gives a list of good things which one may wish everyone to possess, he mentions the eleven advantages referred to above¹ and, among other things, adds birth in the Middle-Country (*majjhimadesupapatti*), meeting good people (*sappurisa*), freedom from disease, long life and *nicca-sukhavihāra*. These additional things we do not find in B. He may also wish to destroy akusaladhammas if they have already arisen in him, and not to allow them to arise if they have not yet arisen. Similarly, if the kusaladhammas have already not arisen in him, he should endeavour to make them arise and should cultivate them if they have already arisen in him.² If he can not have the feelings of *mettā* for a *majjhatta*, then for some time he should wait and try to find out defects in himself. He should be ashamed of himself. He should say that the Buddha practised *mettā* even upon his *enemy*, while he himself can not practise even upon a neutral person. He should think of his good qualities only, as when one takes water, one removes dirt from it and then takes it. Then he goes into several details of the ways and means to remove ill-will, among which we find the mention of *kammassakatā* referred to by B. in IX.23,24, and *dānasamvibhāga* referred to by B. in IX.39.

Upa. also refers to the *sīmasambheda* mentioned by B. in IX.40. Gradually he extends the feelings of friendliness to all people in one direction, then to those in the second, third, and so on, to the whole world. He gives the same passage from Vibhanga p. 272 as is quoted by B. in IX.44. Similarly Upa., like B. (IX.5) says that it should not be practised upon a dead person because there the *ārammaṇa* itself is lost and so *mettā* can not be produced.

Upa. next deals with the following questions:

METTAYA

(i) *kiṃ mūlam?* (ii) *kiṃ paccupatthānam?* (iii) *kā sam-patti?* (iv) *kā vipatti?* (v) *kiṃ ārammaṇam?*

N.C.

In answer to the first question he gives five things: *alobha*, *adosa*, *amoha*, *rāga* and *sammā-manasikāra*. Although B. refers to the next three questions in IX.93, his explanations are quite

IX. 93
diff.

1. See page 78.

2. See Vbh. 35-36; Vis. XIV.16. Vim. 9-3a.1.

different from those of Upa. In answer to the last, Upa. says that a *satta* is the *ārammāna* but he is careful to add that in the strictest sense, there is no *satta* (*paramatthato satto nāma na vijjati na labbhati*) but only that which is conventionally called by the world *satta*.

[Here now follows a digression to which B. has nothing corresponding in the Vis.]

N.C.

In order to cultivate *mettā* for all beings, the Buddha while he was a Bodhisatta practised the ten pāramitas of *dāna*, *sīla*, *nekkhamma*, *pāññā*, *viriya*, *khanti*, *sacca*, *adhiṭṭhāna*, *mettā* and *upekkhā*.

He refers to the four *adhiṭṭhānas*¹ which are accomplished by the fulfilment of the ten pāramitas. By the fulfilment of the four *adhiṭṭhānas*, he fulfilled *samatha* and *vipassanā*. By the fulfilment of *samatha* he fulfilled all *jhānas*, *vimokkhas*, *samādhis*, *samāpattis*, *Yamakapāṭihāriya-samādhi*² and *Mahākaruṇāsamādhi*.² By the fulfilment of *vipassanā* he fulfilled all *abhiññās*, *paṭisamābhidas*, *balas* and *vesārajjas*. As a perfection of the *pakatiñāna* he fulfilled *sabbaññutañāna*.

Upa. concludes this section with 'evam Bodhisattamahāsatto mettam bhāvetvā anukkamena bodhim paripūresi.'

[This whole section contains much that is not found in B. So also there is much in B. that is not found here. As, for instance, Upa. gives no details such as *odhiso pharaṇā*, *anodhiso pharaṇā* etc., given by B. in IX.49-52.]

32. KARUÑA.

[Bk. 8.9.1—8.10.2; Tak. 437a.—437b. Cf. Vis. IX.77-83.]

IX. 108

Here also as well as in the following two sections, the simile of the father and mother looking at their only child with feelings of compassion, delight and equanimity is used [Cf. B.IX.108] to explain the words *karuṇā*, *muditā* and *upekkhā*. Upa. gives as usual the *lakkhana*, *rasa*, etc., and also in addition *sampatti* and *vipatti*. Upa. agrees with B. in his statement about the *paccupatthāna* only, which according to both is *vihimsā*. The ānisamśas are the same as in *mettā*. The order of the persons on whom it is to be cultivated in succession is the same, although Upa. does not mention *piyapuggala*.

1. *Sacca*, *cāga*, *upasama* and *paññā*; see Mvy. 1581-84.

2. See p. 29 and note 2 on the same; also see Netti, pp. 99-100.

33. MUDITĀ.

The statement is almost the same as in B.

34. UPEKKHA.

Upa. gives the *lakkhaṇa*, *rasa*, etc., which agree with what B. gives in IX.96. Then there is also a passage which gives the substance of B. IX.88: *mettādisu paṭiladdhatikacatukkajjhānena paguṇatatiyajjhānā vuṭṭhāya...purimāsu ādīnavām disvā...upekkhāya ca ānisamṣam disvā...* Similarly we can trace the expressions from Vibhanga 275 *ekaṁ puggalām neva manāpām, na amanāpām disvā* quoted by B. in IX.88.

IX. 96

IX. 88

The order of persons, on whom it is to be cultivated in succession is different in Upa. After *majjhata*, he takes *verī* and then *piyapuggala*, while B. puts *verī* last (IX.89.) A fine simile is given for the *upekkhā* which comes after the first three, *mettā*, *karuṇā* and *muditā*. Just as a man, when he sees his relative coming back from afar after a long separation, rejoices and pays attention to him, but later, when he has been in his company for some time, he fails to pay the same attention, and gradually becomes indifferent; so the *yogāvacara* leaves the first three bhāvanās and proceeds to the fourth.

IX. 89
diff.

PAKINṄNAKAKATHA.

[The whole discussion under this heading is very important and very much corresponds to B.'s IX.103—to the end of the IXth chapter.]

IX. 103-124

One should start with the cultivation of these appamaññās with only one living being as the *ārammaṇa*. He may practise them upon *tiracchānayoni*, *dussīla*, *sīlavanta*, *kāmesu nibbiṇṇa*, *sāvaka*, *paccekabuddha*, and *sammāsambuddha*.

A point is raised: why is it that the first three bhāvanās have only the first three trances and not the fourth? The answer is that the sufferings of beings produce *byāpāda*, *ahimsā*, and *arati* and they have as their appropriate remedy a mind with *somanassa* and so he practises *mettā*, *karuṇā* and *muditā*, and therefore only the three trances are produced and not the fourth. He also gives the argument referred to by B. in IX. 111, that *upekkhākubhūmi* is the fourth *jhāna*.

IX. 711

It is very interesting to note that here we find, as an alternative view of some, the same passage from Aṭṭhakanipāta (A. IV. 300) quoted by B. in IX.112, to prove according to them

IX. 112
quotation
id.

the view that all the appamaññas can have the fourth trance. Upa. simply quotes the passage introducing it with the remark 'moreover it is said' and makes no comment at all.

IX. 108

Also another point is raised: why is it that these appamññas are just four, neither three nor five? The answer is 'because they are the *paṭipakkha* of *byāpāda*, *vihesā*, *arati* and *paṭghā-nunaya*', which are only four. With this compare B. IX.108.

IX. 119-123

The appamaññas have one *lakkhana* in so far as they are the opposite of the ādīnavas, have living beings as their ārammāna, and have the thought of *hitasukha*; but they have distinct *lakkhanas* in that the *paṭipakkha*, ārammāna, and *hitasukha* of each are distinct from those of the others. In this connection Upa. also refers to the Yellow-Garment-Sutta (黃衣修多羅 *Haṭiddavasanasutta*) from which he gives the same passage (S. v. 119-121) that is quoted by B. in IX. 119. Upa. concludes this section with the remarks on this passage which closely agree with B. IX. 120—123.

35. CATUDHATUVAVATTHĀNA.

[Bk. 8. 13a. 9—8. 20a. 4; Tak. 438b. 25-440b. 13. Cf. B. XI. 27—to the end of Chap. XI].

[It is to be noted here that Upa. gives this section before the section on *āhāre paṭikkūlasaññā*, just the reverse of the order of B. In the list of the kammaṭṭhānas mentioned by Upa. earlier¹ (4.6a.2-9) they are mentioned in this same order as is followed by Upa. here.]

XI. 117
s.d.

As usual, here also Upa. gives *lakkhana*, *rasa*, etc. He enumerates eight ānisamśas which are almost the same as are given by B. in XI. 117, with the exception that instead of *vālamigayakkharakkhasādivikappam anāpajjanto* of B., Upa. gives *itthipurisavikappam jahati*.

XI. 31
diff.

Like B., Upa. also treats this subject in two ways, *sankhe-pato*, *vitthārato*. (Cf. B. XI. 28-44 and XI. 45ff. 1. In his detailed discussion, Upa. follows the passages from M. i. 185, 187, 188, quoted by B. in XI. 31. Upa. does not comment, as B. does, on the difficult words of the passages, nor does he give a detailed explanation of the thirty-two parts of the body.

XI. 86
s.d.

Upa. refers to the following ten-fold classification. of the former teachers, while B. gives a thirteen-fold classification but does not refer to any teachers of the past. [B. XI. 86].

1. See p. 38.

One should reflect upon the four dhātus in the following ways:

(i) *Vacanattato*. Two kinds of *attha*: *sāmañña* and *visesa* are given as in B. XI. 81. This is further classified into

(a) *Mahantapātubhāvato*. This corresponds to B. XI. 97 and, in addition, we find in the verses given by Upa. first lines of the first two verses and the third verse in Vis. VII. 41 and the first verse in XI. 102. In these verses there is also a reference to the seventh sun. (Cf. *Sattasuriyasutta*, A. iv. 100-103.)

(b) Although these mahābhūtas are not real, they appear to be real. These mahābhūtas appear as man, or woman, long or short, or as a tree or a mountain. [Cf. Vis. XI. 100 and the last two lines of XI. 89].

(c) Just as a man possessed by spirits becomes either stiff or strong, light or moving, so this body becomes.

(d) Upa. gives the interpretations of the words *pathavī*, *āpo*, *tejo*, *vāyo* and *dhātu*, which are the same as are given by B. in XI. 87. Upa. goes into more details.

(ii) *Kiccato* (以事). This mentions the functions of each of the dhātus, corresponding to what B. says in XI. 93 under the *rasa* of each of these.

(iii) *Kalāpato*. This corresponds to B. XI. 88, although Upa. goes into many more details.

(iv) *Cunnato*. This corresponds to B. XI. 89. There is a passage which corresponds to *imasmin hi sarire majjhimena pamāñena...*, though it does not agree with it in all the details.

(v) *Avinibbhogato*. This partly corresponds to B. XI. 105. The explanation is more akin to XI. 90-92.

(vi) *Paccayto*. This corresponds to XI. 111-12 though there is a wide divergence in details.

(vii) *Lakkhañato*. This corresponds to Vis. XI. 93.

(viii) *Sabhāga-visabhāgato*. This corresponds to XI. 106. We can trace a passage that corresponds to B.'s: *purimā dve garukattā sabhāgā, tathā pacchimā lahukattā*.

XI. 81

XI. 97 and something in addition.

XI. 89, 100

XI. 98

XI. 87

XI. 93

XI. 88

XI. 89
p.a.XI. 105,
90-92

XI. 111-112

XI. 93

XI. 106

XI. 95-96

(ix) *Nānattekattato*. This corresponds to B. XI. 95-96 and also includes B.'s classification of *sangahato* (XI. 108) Upa. adds much more to what is said in Vis.

N O.

(x) 以 觀 界 縱. Like a wooden doll, like a puppet that is painted, dressed up and worked by strings within, is our body. It is made of these four great elements and stirred up by the wind-element walks or stands, goes or comes, stretches itself or contracts itself, or speaks. The *yogāvacara* realises that there is no *satta*, no *jīva*, but merely 'name and form'. When he has delimited 'name and form' he knows the 'name and form' to be suffering, knows craving (*taṇhā*) to be the cause of suffering, its cessation to be the cessation of suffering and the Eightfold Path to be the Path leading to the cessation of suffering. Thus, he sees into the Truths and sees danger in suffering. He has thoughts of *anicca*, *dukkha* and *anattā*. He sees advantages into the cessation of suffering.

Upa. concludes this section thus: *indriyesu, balesu, bojjhan-gesu susanṭhito hoti. Sankhāranimittā tassa cittam vutthahati, amatadhātum sacchikaroti.*

36. AHARE PATIKKULASANNA.

[Bk. 8.20.5—8.22.9; Tak. 440b.14—441a.10; Cf. B.XI.1-26.]

XI. 26

As usual Upa. gives the *lakkhana*, *rasa*, etc. He gives the eight ānisamsas which are given in almost the same words as are used in B. XI. 26.

XI. 5
diff.

He must cultivate the reflection on the disgusting nature of the food that he eats, the food for which he has to go about searching. He must reflect upon this *paṭikkulatā* in the following five ways: [Compare B. XI. 5, where B. mentions ten ways.]

XI. 6-13

(i) 以 經 營 (?*byāpārato*). This seems to correspond to *gamanato* and *pariyesanato* of B. XI. 6-13. For the sake of food and drink, a man has to do many *evi* things. He has to leave sacred places and go for food through dirty roads to towns or villages.

(ii) *Paribhogato*. This corresponds to Vis. XI. 14-16. XI. 14-16

(iii) *Nidhānato*. This corresponds to Vis. XI. 18. XI. 18

(iv) *Nissandato*. This corresponds to Vis. XI. 22-23. XI. 22-23
though Upa. introduces much that is new. He p.a.
compares the human body that is constantly oozing
out to 'a broken jar in which wine is placed.' He
also speaks of ninety--nine thousand pores of hair.
One part of this *nissanda* is eaten up by worms,
another is destroyed by fire, a third sustains the
body, a fourth is turned into urine and a fifth into
the trunk of the body.

(v) 以 聚 (? accumulation). This seems to correspond to *phalato* of B. XI. 21. Many expressions XI. 21
are substantially the same.

In this way when the *yogāvacara* has practised upon the *paṭikkūlatā* of *āhāra*, he is disgusted with food and gradually his mind becomes free from distraction, *nīvaraṇas* vanish, trance-factors appear and the *upacārajjhāna* is accomplished.

37. AKINCANNAYATANA.

38. NEVASANNANASANNAYATANA. } These have been already
described in the *pathavī-kasiṇa*.¹

Upa. concludes with some verses which are not quite clear. There is a mention of the name of a country called Po-li-phu-to:
波利弗多 Pāṭaliputta.

Here end the Thirty-eight Kammatṭhānas.

1. See pp. 55, 56.

CHAPTER IX

PĀNCA ABHINNA.

[Bk. 9.1.5—9.13a.3; Tak. 441a-444c. Cf. Vis.
Chapters XII & XIII.]

The *yogāvacara* having mastered *samādhi* can produce in the fourth trance five miraculous powers (*abhiññā*):

- (1) That of the body (corresponding to the *iddhividha* of B. XII. 2.
- (2) That of the divine ear (*dibbasota*).
- (3) That of knowing the minds of others (*paracittavijānāna*).
- (4) That of remembering past lives (*pubbe-nivāsānussati*).
- (5) That of divine eye (*dibbacakkhu*).

1. IDDHIVIDHA.

The miraculous power of the body means the power of effecting change or transformation. Upa. gives the interpretation of other miraculous powers also. Then he sets up the following questions:

- (A) How many kinds of the power of transformation or *iddhi* are there?
- (B) Who practises them?
- (C) How can they be produced?

XII. 23-25

In answer to the question (A) Upa. mentions *adhitthānā iddhi*, *vikubbanā iddhi*, and *manomayā iddhi* which alone are meant in this context, according to B. also (XII. 45). Upa. also later mentions the remaining seven iddhis as outlined by B. (XII. 26-44) from copious illustrative extracts from Ps. ii. 205-214 (*iddhikathā*). The explanation of these closely follows that of Ps. which is generally followed by B. also. The explanation of *ariyā iddhi* is given by Upa. in full following Ps. ii. 212-13.¹

XII. 26-44

It is also worth noting that though Upa. gives generally all the names mentioned as illustrations of those persons who had attained iddhis, we do not find in his work the name of Mendaka in the list of names of persons given as illustrations of *puññāya* *iddhi*. Is it because his name is included under the mention of the *pānca Mahāpuññā* so redundant?

1. Also given in Pet. 218-233 (Bur. Printed Text 119-20).

(B) Taking *ākāsa-kasiṇa* as the ninth or the fifth [*kasiṇa*]¹, one masters the fourth trance, or one attains the fourth *rūpāvacara* trance with some distinction, or one masters the fourth a second time and then one practises these iddhis.

(C) In answer to the question as to how the iddhis can be produced, Upa. gives the same passage from Ps. ii. 205 as is given by B. in XII. 50: *Idha bhikkhu chanda-samādhi-padhāna-sankhāra-samannāgataṃ iddhipādaṃ bhāveti....* Upa. comments on this passage also. While commenting upon the word *viriya* he gives the fourfold formula of right exertion as given in Vibhanga 325-26, which is not given in this context either in Ps. or in Vis. The comment generally agrees with that of B.

Upa. gives three small separate sections to illustrate *adhitṭhānā iddhi*, *manomayā iddhi* and *vikubbanā iddhi*. He does this by giving the relevant passages from Ps. ii. 207-211, paragraphs 7-9. Upa. is as profuse as Ps. in the detailed description of *adhitṭhānā iddhi*.

To illustrate the distinction between *adhitṭhānā iddhi* and *vikubbanā iddhi*, Upa. says: *adhitṭhānāya iddhiyā pakativanṇam appahāya adhitṭhāti, vikubbanāya iddhiyā pakativanṇam vijahati.*

PAKINNAKAKATHA

Upa. adds a small paragraph of *pakinṇākakathā* in which he tells us that forms created by this miraculous power disappear at the end of the period of time set up previously by the *iddhimā*. If no such period is first delimited, then they may disappear as soon as he thinks so. He also says that a man created by this *iddhi* is without *jīvitindriya*. As the ārammaṇas of the *iddhividha-ñāna*, he mentions nine:

| | | |
|-------------------|--------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>paritta</i> , | <i>mahaggata</i> , | <i>na vattabba</i> ; |
| <i>atīta</i> , | <i>anāgata</i> , | <i>paccuppanna</i> ; |
| <i>ajjhatta</i> , | <i>bahiddhā</i> , | <i>ajjhattabahiddhā</i> . |

B. in XIII. 105 mentions twelve kinds of ārammaṇas, of which he gives seven as applicable to this *iddhividha-ñāna* (XIII. 106). They are the same as those given by Upa. with the exception that B. does not mention *na vattabba* and *ajjhattabahiddhā*.

XIII. 105
s.d.

1. See p. 90 below.

2. DIBBASOTA

The same questions as in the first *abhiññā* are set up. The *yogāvacara* having attained mastery in the four iddhipādas enters the fourth trance, gradually emerges from it and with his natural ear pays attention to sounds far and near, gross or fine, in one or the other direction. By practising in this way his mind gradually becomes pure and his *sotadhātu* also becomes pure and thus is transformed into heavenly ear with which he can hear sounds human and superhuman, far and near. Former teachers have said that this *yogāvacara* first hears the sounds of worms residing within his body. [Cf. *sa-dehanissitā pāñakasaddā* of B. XIII. 3]. Then gradually he extends his sphere.

Upa. also points out another view according to which this *ādikammika yogāvacara* cannot first hear the sounds of worms residing within his body. He cannot hear the fine sounds which cannot become the objects of his natural ear. Upa.'s treatment is generally the same as B's, with some slight variations, as when he gives three ārammaṇas only, *paritta*, *paccuppanna* and *bahiddhā*, while B. gives four adding *ajjhatta* to the three given here. [See B. XIII. 109.] Upa. adds that if the natural ear is lost, the divine ear also is lost. One can hear the sound in a thousand world-systems (*lokadhātū*), the paccekabuddhas in still more, and the Tathāgatas in countless ones.

3. PARACITTAVIJANANA.

With mastery in the fourth trance with *ālokakasiṇa*, and with the divine eye produced, one knows the mind of others. The *yogāvacara* having practised the four iddhipādas attains mastery over his mind and purifies it. With *ālokakasiṇa* he attains the fourth trance and gradually emerges from it. He pervades his body with light, and, with the divine eye, sees the colour of his mind or heart, and knows its nature from the colour.

XIII. 9
q.d.

If there is *somanassindriya*, the colour is like that of *dadhi*
or *naṇṇī*.

If there is *domanassīndriya*, the colour is purple.

If there is *upekkhāndriya*, the colour is like that of honey.

If there is *lobha*, the colour is yellow.

If there is *dosa*, the colour is black.

If there is *moha*, the colour is muddy or turbid.

If there is *saddhā* and *ñāṇa*, the colour is [spotless] pure
(*suddha*).

[Vis. XIII. 9 mentions only the first three cases of these and his remarks are: *rattam nigrodhapakkasadisam*, *kālakam jambupakkasadisam* and *pasannatilatelasadisam*.]

Having thus understood the changes of colour in his own self, he should pervade the bodies of others with light and notice the colour of the mind or heart of others. Gradually he should leave the colours and know the heart itself. Then by this practice he comes to know whether a mind is *sa-rāga* or *vitarāga*, *sa-dosa* or *vitadosa*, and so on. [Cf. B. XIII. 11]. This *cetopariyañāṇa* has eight ārammaṇas which are the same as are given by B. in XIII. 110.

The mind which is free from āsavas cannot be known by an ordinary man (*puthujjana*). The mind of a being in the *arūpāvacara* sphere can be known only by the Buddhas. As in the last section, here also Upa. adds that one can know the minds in a thousand world-systems (*lokadhātū*), the pacceka-buddhas in still more, and the Tathāgatas in innumerable ones.

4. PUBBENIVĀSANUSSATI.

Upa. gives three kinds of *pubbenivāsānussati*, by the first of which he can at the most recall only seven lives, and by the second only fourteen, and by the third he can only practise the iddhipādas. [With this compare B. XIII. 27 where we find B. mentioning *parikammamasamādhīñāṇa* or as some would call it *atītāmsa-ñāṇa*, which properly speaking is not *pubbenivāsānussati*.]

The method of producing this kind of miraculous power is the same as is given by B. in XIII. 22-25. If he is not able to produce this power he should not give up efforts. He should again attain the trance. Upa. gives the simile of a mirror which we often find used in Buddhist books. If you cannot see your face in a mirror you do not throw away the mirror but rub it again and again until you are able to see your face in it. B. has used this simile in another place [XVIII. 16], though here he uses quite different similes. Upa. refers to Āyashā Sobhita who was considered as the chief among those who remembered the past lives. [See A. i. 25. B. does not refer to him.]

XIII. 15-18 We have a passage which corresponds to B.'s XIII. 15-18. Upa. also speaks of the Titthiyas who can remember only forty kappas. Upa. very concisely states the case of Sammāsambuddhas who can recall the past lives and actions of others as well as their own; they can also recall places. Others can recall their own actions only and little of others. The Sammāsambuddhas can recall everything as they please, while others can do so only in succession (*paṭipāṭi*). The Sammāsambuddhas may or may not enter upon *saṃādhi* for recalling the past lives. Even if they do not enter they can recall, while others can do so only by entering upon *saṃādhi*.

N.C.

5. DIBBACAKKHU.

XIII. 73
s.d. This miraculous power is obtained by one who has attained mastery in the fourth trance with *ālokakasiṇa* as the ninth or the fifth [*kasīna*]¹, and by one who has a natural eye (i. e. unimpaired). It is of two kinds: (i) *kammaphalavipākanibbattam*, and (ii) *bhāvanānibbattam*. [Compare *sucaritakammānibbattam* and *viriyabhāvanābalanibbattam* of B. XIII. 73]. By the first, one can see whether a treasure-box does contain any treasure or not. Having attained mastery over the four iddhipādas, he attains the fourth trance in the *ālokakasiṇa*, has *ālokasaññā*, makes no distinction between day and night and finds no obstacle for his mind. His mind knows no darkness. He is above day-light. Gradually, by this practice he attains *dibbacakkhu*. Here we have also the passage which is commented upon by B. in XIII. 73-77: *So dibbena cakkhunā visuddhena atikkantamānusakena satte passati cavamāne upapajjamāne, hīne pañīte, suvaññe dubbanñe, sugate duggate, yathā-kammūpage sabbasatte....* Upa. does not comment upon this passage. When a *yogāvacara* is thus able to produce the *dibbacakkhu*, he must have the kilesas destroyed. If he does not destroy the kilesas and if he has the *dibbacakkhu*, he falls from *saṃādhi*. If he falls from *saṃādhi*, his *āloka* vanishes, and the forms seen by him also disappear. [Cf. B. XIII. 96: *tato āloko antaradhāyati, tasmin̄ antarahite rūpagataṇ̄ pi na dissati*]. Among the kilesas mentioned, we find *vicikicchā*, *micchānussati*, *thīnamiddha*, *māna*, *pāpikā vācā*, *sampappalāpa*, *nānattasaññā*, and so on. After the kilesas are destroyed, if he cannot obtain mastery over ~~the~~ trance, his *dibbacakkhu* is low, the *āloka* is low, and the forms seen by him are also low.

1. See p. 87 above.

Upa. mentions five ārammaṇas: *paritta*, *paccuppanna*, *ajjhatta*, *bahiddhā*, and *ajjhattabahiddhā*, while B. mentions only four omitting the last from the above list. He further says that from this *dibbacakkhu* are produced the four kinds of knowledge: (i) *anāgatam̄sañāṇa*, (ii) *kammassakatañāṇa*, (iii) *yathākammūpagañāṇa*, (iv) and *kammavipākaphalañāṇa*. [With this compare B. XIII. 103, where B. mentions only two kinds: *anāgatam̄sañāṇa* and *yathākammūpagañāṇa*.]

XIII. 103
diff.

PAKINṄNAKAKATHĀ

Upa. also adds *pakīṇṇakakathā*, in which he says that if the *yogāvacara* practises *saṃādhi* with the intention of seeing or hearing, he sees or hears. If he has both the intentions, he both sees and hears. And if he practises with the intention of seeing and hearing, as well as, knowing the minds of others, he can do all the three.

Lokiyā abhiññās are *sāsavā*, *rūpapaṭibaddhā* and *pothujjanikā*. If they are *kusalā*, they are *sekhiyā* and *pothujjanikā*. Those of Arhats are *abyākatā*.

These abhiññās are not produced in the *arūpāvacara loka*.

N.C.

CHAPTER X

PANNAPARICCHEDA

[Bk. 9.13a. 5—9.17.5. Tak. 444c-445c. Cf. B. XIV. 1-31]

N.C.

As usual, Upa. gives the *lakkhana*, *rasa*, etc. Upa. agrees with B. in his statement regarding *lakkhana*, and *paccupatthāna* only. The ānisamsas are innumerable but they should be known in brief. He gives them in several gāthās in addition to the eleven ānisamsas which he mentions later. Regarding *lakkhana*, *rasa*, etc., he also gives another alternative as follows: *Vijālakkhanā, saddhammappavesarasā, avijjandhakāra-viddhamsana-paccupatthāna, catupatīsaṁbhidā-padaṭṭhāna*. To explain *paññā*, Upa. gives a passage which is substantially the same as is given in Dhs. para. 16 [also cf. paragraphs 20, 555.]: *Paññā, pajānanā, vicayo, pavicayo, dhammavivicayo.....etc.*

When Upa. comes to the answer of the question ‘*katividhā paññā*’ he starts with

XIV. 9-10
agree in
sense only

(A) *Duvidhā*:

Lokiyā
Lokuttarā

} The explanations generally imply the same idea, though they differ in expressions, as in B. XIV. 9-10.

XIV. 14

(B) *Tividhā*:

(i) *Cintāmayā¹*
Sutamayā
Bhāvanāmayā

} These correspond to B. XIV. 14, which gives quotations from Vibhanga 324-25.

XIV. 16-18

(ii) *Āyakosallam*
Apāyakosallam
Upāyakosallam

} These correspond to passages from Vbh. 325-26 quoted in Vis. XIV. 16-18.

N.C.

(iii) *Ācayā*: *tibhumi-kusala-paññā.*
Apacyā: *catūsu maggesu paññā.*
Neva ācayā no apacyā: *catūsu bhūmīsu phalesu ca tīsu bhūmīsu kiriya(事)-abyākate² ca paññā.*

1. See Pet. III. 78, VII. 261 (Burmese ed. 240).

2. Apparently there is some incorrect reading here. It should be 無記 instead of 有記. See also 9.15a.5-7 which also reads in the same way but clearly we must have a reading which would mean *abyākata*, as is clear from Vbh.

(C) *Catubbidhā*:

(i) [The same as in Vibhanga p. 328: N.C. in Vis.] N.C.

Kammassakataññānam: *dasasu thānesu sammādit-*
thi. [Explained in Vbh.]

Saccānulomikaññānam: *khandhā aniccā'ti, dukkhā'ti,*
anattā'ti, evamādikā khanti.

Maggasamangissaññānam: *catūsu maggesu paññā*.

Phalasamangissaññānam: *catūsu phalesu paññā*.

| | | |
|---|---|--|
| (ii) <i>Kāmāvacara-paññā</i> <i>Rūpāvacara-paññā</i> <i>Arūpāvacara-paññā</i> <i>Apariyāpannā paññā</i> : | <i>Kāmāvacara-kusalābyākate</i> ¹ <i>paññā, etc.</i> [The explanation is the same as is given of this classification in Vibhanga 329. The first three of these are given in the threefold classification in Vis. XIV. 15.] | XIV. 15 gives only the first three. |
| (iii) <i>Dhammeññānam</i> 比智, <i>anvayeññānam</i> ² of Vbh. <i>Paracittavijānanānam</i> (<i>paricceññānam</i> of Vibhanga) 等智, (? <i>sammati-</i> or <i>sammuti-</i> <i>ññānam</i> of Vbh.) | [Cf. Vbh. 329. N.C. N.C. in Vis. ³ The explanations are the same as in Vbh. 329.] | |
| (iv) <i>Atthi paññā ācayāya no apacayāya</i> <i>Atthi paññā apacayāya no ācayāya</i> <i>Atthi paññā ācayāya ceva apacayāya ca</i> <i>Atthi paññā neva ācayāya no apacayāya</i> | [The same as in Vbh. 330. N. C. in Vis.] | N.C. |
| (v) <i>Atthi paññā nibbidāya no paṭivedhāya</i> <i>Atthi paññā paṭivedhāya no nibbidāya</i> <i>Atthi paññā nibbidāya ca paṭivedhāya ca</i> <i>Atthi paññā neva nibbidāya-no paṭivedhāya</i> | [The same as in Vbh. 330. N. C. in Vis.] | N.C. |

1. Here also the reading in this text is 有記, but it must be 無記. For, the intended word is *abyākta*.

2. For this expression, cf. Abhk. V. 85; vi. 184; Madhy. p. 480; also cf. A.M.B. p. 254.

3. Cf. Mvy. 1234-37 where the characters used for the second and the third of these are different.

| | | |
|---------|--|---|
| XIV. 21 | (vi) (a) <i>Attha-paṭisambhidā</i> <i>Dhamma-paṭisambhidā</i> <i>Nirutti-paṭisambhidā</i> <i>Paṭibhāna-paṭisambhidā</i> | [The same as in Vis. XIV. 21 and Vbh. 331, as well as 293.] |
| XIV. 22 | (b) <i>Attha-paṭisambhidā: hetuphale nāṇam.</i> <i>Dhamma-paṭisambhidā: hetumhi nāṇam.</i> <i>Nirutti-paṭisambhidā: dhammaniruttābhilāpe nāṇam.</i> <i>Paṭibhāna-paṭisambhidā: nāṇesu nāṇam.</i> | [Vbh. 293 cf. Vis. XIV. 22.] |
| XIV. 24 | (c) <i>Atthapaṭisambhidā: dukkhe ca nirodhe ca nāṇam.</i> <i>Dhammapaṭisambhidā: samudaye ca magge ca nāṇam.</i> <i>Niruttipaṭisambhidā: dhammani-ruttābhilāpe nāṇam.</i> <i>Paṭibhānapaṭisambhidā: nāṇesu nāṇam.</i> | [Vbh. 293 Cf. Vis. XIV 24 which quotes from Vbh.] |
| XIV. 24 | (d) [The same as in Vbh. 294, referred to in Vis. XIV. 24] | The knowledge of the Buddhist literature as contained in the old nine-fold division such as <i>sutta</i> , <i>geyya</i> , <i>veyyākaraṇa</i> , <i>gāthā</i> , <i>udāna</i> , <i>itiwuttaka</i> , <i>jātaka</i> , <i>abbhutadhamma</i> , and <i>vedalla</i> . [All these words are given in their transliterations.] |
| N.C. | (e) There is one more interpretation of the paṭisambhidās given by Upa. which begins with <i>cakkhumhi nāṇam</i> etc., some details of which are not quite clear. [N. C. in Vbh. or Vis. in the corresponding portions.] | |
| N.C. | (vii) <i>Dukkhe nāṇam: dukkha-sampayuttam nāṇam.</i> <i>Dukkhasamudaye nāṇam: dukkhasamudayasampayuttam nāṇam.</i> <i>Dukkhanirodhe nāṇam: bhāvanāśampayuttam nāṇam.</i> <i>Maggasamūngissa nāṇam: paṭipadā- nāṇam.</i> | [N. C. in Vis.] |

CHAPTER XI

PANCA UPAYA

PART ONE

[Bk. 10.1.5-10, 22a. 4; Tak. 445c-451c. Cf. Vis. Chapters XIV, XV, XVII.]

The *yogāvacara* wishing to be free from old age and death, wishing to get rid of the cause of birth and death and the darkness of ignorance, wishing to cut off the strings of craving and to attain the *ariyā paññā*, should find the means (*upāyā*) in five things: Khandhās, āyatanas, dhātus, hetupaccayas (or *nidānas*) and *ariyasaccas*.

1. K H A N D H A

The khandhās are five: *rūpa*, *vedanā*, *saññā*, *sankhāra* and *viññāna*.

RŪPA

What is *rūpakkhandha*? *cattāro ca mahābhūtā, catunnañ ca mahābhūtānañ upādāya rūpam*.

Upa. explains the four mahābhūtas as explained already by him in *Catudhātuvavatthānañ* (p. 83). Under the *upādārūpa*, he gives a list of twenty-six things which are the same as are given by B. in XIV. 36, except that there is an addition of two: *jātirūpa* and *middharūpa*. Thus Upa. says that the rūpas are thirty in all.

XIV. 36
diff.

[B. in XIV 71 emphatically rejects¹ any addition to his number, twenty-eight. He does refer among other rūpas, to these two rūpas, but he says that *jātirūpa* is included under *rūpassa upacaya* and *rūpassa santati* [also see XIV. 66], and *middha-rūpa*² which is advocated by some (*ekaccānam matena*) is rejected by the Aṭṭhakathās on the authority of the following quotation from Sn. 541: *addhā munī'si sambuddho, nattī nīvaraṇā tava*. Dhammapāla in his comment on the word *ekaccānam* says *Abhayagirivāsinam*. Buddhaghosa is very emphatic when he states: *middharūpam tāva nattī yevā ti paṭikkhitam* and *iti aṭṭhavīsatividhi n rūpam hoti anūnam anadhi;kam*.]

XIV. 71
combats
this view.

1. See also Abhm. p. 72, AbhmV. p. 30 which support B.

2. See pp. 48, 123.

XIV. 42

In the upādārūpas, Upa. gives the words *cakkhāyatana*, *sotāyatana*, *ghānāyatana* etc. instead of B.'s *cakkhu*, *sota*, *ghāna*, etc. While explaining these organs of sense, Upa. refers to the various views about the same, among which he refers to one expressed by B. in XIV. 42: *apare tejādhikānaṃ pasādo cakkhu, vivara-vāyu-āpa-pathvādhikānaṃ sota-ghāna-jivhā-kāyā ti vadanti*. In the description of the *cakkhāyatana*, Upa. speaks of the three circles of the eye and the five layers of *mamsa*, *lohita*, *vāyu*, *semha*, and *khela* within which it lies. The description of the *cakkhuppasāda* is given by B. [XIV. 48] in these words:

XIV. 48
almost id.

*Yena cakkhuppasādena rūpāni manupassti
parittam sukhumam etam ūkāsirasamūpamam*¹.

Upa. also like B. ascribes this quotation to Sāriputta and his quotation is the same except that instead of *ūkāsira* of B. he uses the word *ūkā*.

N.C.

Upa. gives a very clear distinction between the mahābhūtas and the *upādā* rūpas. The former depend upon one another and are produced all together; the latter are produced relying upon the former. The latter are not depended upon by the former, nor do the latter depend upon one another among themselves. This is beautifully illustrated by a simile. The mahābhūtas are like three sticks² reclining upon one another. The *upādā* rūpas are like the shadows of the three sticks. [10.3.6-7, Tak. 446b. 3-4].

The *yogāvacara* should understand these thirty rūpas in the following five ways:

N.C.

(i) *Samutthānto*. As they arise from *kamma*, *utu*, *citta*, *āhāra*, taken singly or in combination with one another. Upa. gives all details. (Cf. with this Abhs. VIth chapter, para. 6, pp. 28-29.)

(ii) *Kalāpato*. Upa. refers to the various groups, such as *cakkhudasaka*, *sotadasaka*, *itthindriyadasaka*, *vatthudasaka*, *jīvitindriyanavaka* and so on. He knows how many of these are *kammasamutthānā*, *cittasamutthānā* and so on. [Cf. Abhs. VI. 8, p. 29]. To describe the *cakkhusantati*, Upa. gives the simile of the flow of a stream or the flame of a lamp. [Cf. Abhs. VI. 10:

1. See Abhm. p. 66.

2. Cf. Vis. XVII. 78, 196.

rūpakaṭāpasantati kāmaloke dīpajālā viya, nadisoto viya ca abbocchinno pavattati.] Upa. here also goes into minute details.

(iii) *Yonito.* With respect to the birth in the *kāmāvacara* realm or the realm of *opapātika*, *duggatika* or *Brahmakāyika* beings and so on. [Cf. Abhs. VI. 10, p. 30].

(iv) *Nānattato.*

(a) *Duvidham:* *olārika*, *sukhuma*; *ajjhatta*, *bahiddhā*; *jīvitindriya*, *a-jīvitindriya*. Upa. gives the enumeration of the rūpas classified under these headings.

(b) *Tividham:* *upādinna*,¹ *anupādinna*, and *vikāra* (or *pabheda*-rūpa (壞色); *sanidassana-sappatīgha*, *anidassana-sappatīgha*, and *anidassana-appatīgha*.² [See B. XIV. 74].

(c) *Catubbidham:* *sabhāva*, *ākāra* (形 seems to be used for *ākārā-vikāra*), *lakkhaṇa*, and *pariccheda*.

(v) *Ekattato.* *Sabbañ rūpañ na hetu ahetukañ hetu-vippayuttam*.....

[The same passage from Dhs. p.124-25, paragraph 584, quoted by B. in XIV. 72 is given here, with a slight variation in the order of the words.]

VEDANA

N.C.

Although one-fold in its characteristic of sensation, it is

Thānato duvidhā: *kāyikā*, *cetasikā*.

Sabhāvato tividhā: *sukhā*, *dukkhā*, *adukkhamasukhā*.

Dhammato catubbidhā: *kusalā*, *akusalā*, *vipākā*, *kiriyyā*.

Indriyato pañcavidhā: *sukhindriyā*, *dukkhindriyā*, *somanassindriyā*, *domanassindriyā*,

upekkhindriyā.

Kañhasukkato chabbidhā: each member of the threefold classification above is modified by the words *sāsavā* and *anāsavā*.

[*Uppatti-]dvārato sattavidhā:* *cakkhusamphassajā*, *sotasamphassajā*, *ghāṇa-samphassajā*, *jivhā-samphassajā*, *kāya-samphassajā*, *manodhātu-samphassajā*, *manoviññāṇidhātu-samphassajā*.

1. Upa. seems to explain it as meaning the same as *kammavipākaja* (10.6.7).

2. For the explanation of these terms, also see DhsCm. 46, Sph. 60-62.

Upa. also further says that when taken in detail they are one hundred and eight.¹ He also shows how we get that number.

SANNA

Although onefold in its characteristic of perceiving the object, perception is

N.O.

*Kaṇhasukkavasena duvidhā: vipariyāsasaññā, avipariyāsa-
saññā.*

Akusalato tividhā: rāgasasaññā, dosasaññā, vihesūsaññā.

*Kusalato tividhā: nekkhamma-saññā, adosa-saññā, avihimsā-
saññā.*

Catubbidhā:

(a) In so far as one does not know the real nature of things: *asubhe subhasaññā, dukkhe sukhasaññā, anicce niccasāññā, anattani attasaññā.*

(b) In so far as one knows the real nature of things: *asubhasaññā, dukkhasaññā, aniccasāññā, anattasāññā.*

*Vinaye pañca-saññā: asubhe subhasaññā, asubhe asubha-
saññā, subhe asubhasaññā, subhe subhasaññā, vicikicchā-
saññā.*

*Ārammaṇato cha saññā: rūpasaññā, saddasaññā, gandha-
saññā, rasa-saññā, phoṭṭohabbasaññā, dhamma-saññā.*

(*Uppatti-*) *dvārato sattavidhā: cakkhu-sāmphassajā, sota-
sāmphassajā, ghāṇa-sāmphassajā, jivhā-sāmphassajā,
kāya-sāmphassajā, manodhātu-sāmphassajā, manovi-
ññāṇa-dhātu-sāmphassajā.*

*Kusalato tividhā: nekkhamma-saññā, adosa-saññā, avihim-
sā-saññā.*

Evaṁ nānattasaññā veditabbā.

SANKHARA

XIV. 133

184
much diff.

Upa. gives a long list of *thirty-two* sankhāras and adds at the end: *vedanāsaññāvivajitā sabbe cetasikā dhammā sankhāradhammo.* In this list we find *cittā*² and 蓋

1. Cf. Vis. XVII. 229, where we have 89 kinds of sensation.

2. This word seems to be used for *saddhā* as it is explained as *cittassa pasādananā*.

nīvaraṇas. On the other hand, there are some from B.'s list in the XIV. 133-184, which we do not find in Upa.'s list. Each of this list is explained by Upa. by similes many of which are very appropriate. For instance, *phassa* is likened to the light of the sun striking the wall, *adhimokha* to water flowing on to a lower level, *viriya* to a strong bull able to carry a burden, *diṭṭhi* to a blind man touching and feeling an elephant, *anottappa* to a wicked king who fears nobody. Another simile is also to be noted. *Ahirika* is likened to a *Candāla* and along with *anottappa* is said to be *agāravapadaṭṭhāna*. N.C.

VINNĀNA

Upa. gives only seven kinds of viññānas : *cakkhuviññāṇa*, *sota-viññāṇa*, *ghāna-viññāṇa*, *jivhā-viññāṇa*, *kāya-viññāṇa*, *mano-viññāṇa* and *manodhātu-viññāṇa*. One should understand these viññānas in three ways :

XIV. 88-
124
altogether
diff.

- (i) *Vattharammaṇato* : the five viññānas have separate vatthus and separate ārammaṇas, while *manodhātu* and *manoviññāṇadadhātu* have the same *vatthu*, though the former has five ārammaṇas while the latter has six. Upa. goes into many more minute details such as the internal or external *vatthu* or *ārammaṇa*, etc.
- (ii) *Ārammaṇato* : several details are given which are not quite clear.
- (iii) *Dhammato* : the association with different viññānas of one or more of the following : *vitakka*, *vicāra*, *pīti*, *sukha*, *dukkha*, *domanassa*, *upekkhā*, etc.

The Section closes with a passage which is the same as is given at the end of the section on *rūpa* [Dhs. para. 584. See above p. 97].

As a general concluding summary of the treatment of all the five khandhas, Upa. says that we must understand them from the following four points of view :

- (i) *Vacanithato*. The words for each of the five khandhas and the word *khandha* itself are interpreted. The interpretation of these words appears to be the same as is given by B. except in the case of the word *rūpa*.
- (ii) *Lakkhaṇato*. The characteristics of each of the khandhas are given. *Rūpa*, *vedanā*, etc. are respectively compared to a

thorn that pricks, the disease of leprosy, a maker of images, the turning of a wheel and knowing the taste.

XIV. 214,
219
p.a.

(iii) *Paricchedato.*

Pañca khandhā : sabbe dhammā.

*Pañca upādānakkhandhā : sabbe sāsavā
dhammā.*

*Pañca dhammakkhandhā : Silakkhandho,
samādhikkhandho, paññākhandho,
vimutti khandho, vimuttiñānakkhan-
dho.*

[Cf. B
XIV.
214,
219.]

(iv) *Sangahato.* All the khandhas are classified under the headings of *āyatana*, *dhātu* and *sacca* with a detailed enumeration.

2. A Y A T A N A N A N I

[Bk. 10. 12a. 4—10. 16. 5 ; Tak. 448c.-449c. Cf. Vis. XV. 1-16.]

XV. 1

Upa. gives the same twelve āyatanas as are given by B. in XV. 1 and gives the interpretation and explanation of each of them. His interpretation is more simple and more natural than that of B. He does not give the artificial interpretation as B. gives of the words *cakkhu*, *sadda*, *jivhā* or *kāya*. He interprets the word *cakkhāyatana* as the *dhātupasāda* by which one sees forms, *jivhā* as the *dhātupasāda* by which one knows the taste, *kāya* as that by which one touches. He explains the word *manāyatana*, as *sattaviññāṇadhātuyo*, and the *dhammāyatana* as *tayo arūpino khandhā*, *atṭhārasa sukhumā-rūpāni*, *nibbānañ ca*.

These āyatanas should be understood in five ways :

XV. 3-7
q.d.

(i) *Vacanatthato.* Upa. interpretes the words *cakkhu*, *sota*, etc. as well as the word *āyatana*. He interprets the word *dhammā* as without life (*nijjivam*), and *āyatana* as *arūpadhamma-dvāra-vatthu-adhitṭhāna*. No artificial interpretation of that word as given by B. is found here.

XIV. 46

(ii) *Visayato.* The eye and the ear do not come into contact with their objects, while the nose, tongue and the body do. [Cf. B. XIV. 46.] Upa. also refers to an alternative view of some people who believe that the eye and the ear¹ do come into

1. Dhammapāla in his comment on this (p. 509) says: *Sotam pi sampatta-visayaggāhi ti ke ci.*

contact with their objects, and their argument is that a magic incantation will be heard unless there is some obstacle, which is very close to the ear. Similarly, the eye must be reaching the object. For, beyond the wall one cannot see. [That is to say it cannot reach the object and so it cannot see.]

(iii) *Paccayato*. [This corresponds to B. XV. 35-39.]

XIV. 35-39

Here we find a passage corresponding to what is ascribed by B. to former teachers (*pubbācariya*). From this B. quotes in brief in XV. 39. The passage given by Upa. is fuller and treats of the same subject. Therein it is shown that *cakkhuviññāna* arises because of *cakkhu*, *rūpa*, *āloka* and *manasikāra*.¹ This passage agrees with that in B. except in the last two cases of *kāyaviññāna* and *manoviññāna*. In the former case, Upa. drops the word *pathavī* from B.'s list, while, in the latter case, he gives *mana*, *dhamma*, *adhimokkha*, *manasikāra* instead of B.'s *bhavangamāna*, *dhamma*, *manasikāra*. Upa. goes then into the detailed explanation of these terms.

(iv) *Vithibhedato*. [This corresponds to B.'s XIV. 115-123.]

XIV. 115-

23

q.d.

Upa. speaks of the three kinds of *vīthi* which corresponds to *mahanta*, *paritta*, *atiparitta*, and mentions the seven kinds of cittas in the *mahantavīthi*. He further gives a very beautiful simile to illustrate the different stages in the process of cognition by the eye. A king is sleeping in his palace² and the queen and a dumb maid-servant are there in attendance, the maid-servant shampooing the feet of the king. The gates of the palatial structure (town, as Upa. puts it) are closed and are guarded by a deaf man. The gardener of the king comes to the gate with a mango-fruit (菴樂果) in his hand with the intention of presenting it to the king. He finds the door closed and knocks at it. The king hears the sound and wakes up. He orders the dumb woman in attendance to have the door opened. She instructs the deaf door-keeper, by means of signs, to open the door. The door is opened and the king sees the fruit, takes

1 Cf. DhsA.59; also Sph. 84-85 (Comment on i.42): *Evañ hi vijnāna-kāraṇam pathyate—cakṣurindriyam anupahatam bhavati, viṣaya ābhā-sagato bhavati, tajjaśa manaskārah pratyupasthito bhavati*; Sik. 225, where *ākāśa* is added as one more contributory factor: *Cakṣuśca pratitya rūpam cālokaṁ tajjañ ca manasikārañ ca pratityotpadyate cakṣurovijnānam*.

2 For a closely allied simile see *Atṭhasalini*, pp. 279, 280; also cf. Compendium of Philosophy p. 30.

N.C.
N.C.

Quota-
tion in
XV. 39 in
a fuller
form.

s.d.

N.C.

a knife in his hand, while the dumb woman holds the fruit in her hand. In come the courtiers. The courtiers take the fruit to the queen who washes it, and seeing whether it is ripe or unripe, gives a piece to each of the courtiers and then finally gives it to the king. The king tastes the fruit and praises or condemns it, as the case may be, after he has eaten it and then goes back to sleep.

The simile is further explained with its application.

N.C.

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>Bhavanga-citta</i> | is like the king who is asleep. |
| <i>Cakkhudvāre rūpāram-</i> <i>māṇa-gahāṇa</i> | is like the gardener who takes the mango-fruit and knocks at the door. |
| 以 緣 展 轉 界 依 處 有 分 心 起 ¹ | (?) is like the king's hearing the sound and instructing the attendant to have the door opened. |
| <i>Āvajjana-citta</i> | is like the dumb woman instructing the man by means of signs to open the door. |
| <i>Cakkhu-viññāṇa</i> | is like the king's seeing the fruit after the deaf man has opened the door. |
| <i>Sampaṭṭicchanacitta</i> | is like the king's taking the knife, the woman's holding the fruit, and the coming in of the courtiers. |
| <i>Santirāṇacitta</i> | is like the courtiers' taking the fruit and giving it to the queen. |
| <i>Votṭhabbanacitta</i> | is like the queen's washing the fruit, [seeing] whether it is ripe or unripe and giving a piece to each of the courtiers(?) ² and then giving one to the king. |
| <i>Javanacitta</i> | is like the king's eating the fruit. |
| <i>Tadārammaṇa-phala-</i> <i>vipāka-citta</i> | is like the king's praising or condemning the fruit after he has eaten it. |
| <i>Bhavangapātacitta</i> | is like the king's going back to sleep. |

1. The meaning of this expression is not clear. Evidently this stage corresponds to *bhavangā-calana* and *bhavanga-upaccheda*. See Vis. XIV.115 and Abhs. IV.3, pp. 16-17.

2. This also is not quite clear.

Upa. also further speaks of the other vīthis as well as that in the *manodvāra*.

(v) *Sangahato*. Upa. tells us how these āyatanas can be distributed under the classification of the khandhas, dhātus and saccas.

3. D H A T U S

[Bk 10.16.6-10.17.2 : Tak. 449c-450a. Cf. Vis. XV. 17 to the end of XVth Chap.]

Upa. gives the same eighteen kinds of dhātus¹ given by B. in XV. 17. He explains those terms. There is so much matter in this section that is found in the last section as well.

These dhammas are called khandhas because they are grouped together, āyatanas because they are *dvāralakkhaṇā*, and dhātus because they are *sabhāvalakkhaṇā*. [Cf. Vis. XV. 21 : *attano sabhāvaṇi dhārenti ti dhātuyo*.]

Upa. gives a quotation ascribed to the Blessed One which purports to say that a man of keen intellect speaks of the Truth of Suffering with the help of khandhās, a man of medium intellect speaks with the help of āyatanas, and a man of dull intellect with the help of dhātus.

4. H E T U P A C C A Y A (因縁)

[Bk. 10.17.3—10.23a.4; (end of Bk. 10); Tak. 450c; Cf. B. XVIIth Chap.]

[It is difficult to say what the original expression for 因縁 might have been. For, the same characters are used for *nidāna*, *paṭiccasamuppāda* and *hetu-paccaya*. (See My. 229, 9210, 2241, 2267). So these characters may as well have been used for *nidānas*.

It may be noted that Upa. gives the section on Hetupaccayas which corresponds to B.'s on *Paṭiccasamuppāda* before the section on saccas, an order which is just the opposite of B.'s.]

We find here the same passage from S. ii. 1. as is quoted by XVII. 2 B. in Vis. XVII. 2 : *Avijjāpaccayā sankhārā, sankhārapaccayā viññāṇam*, etc. We also meet with another passage which gives the negative side of the same formula, *Avijjānirodhā sankhāra-nirodho, sankhāranirodhā viññāṇanirodho*, etc. [Cf. S. ii. 4.] N.C. B. does not give this passage.

1 With this compare Soh. 58-59. (comment on stanza 27).

N.C.

Upa.'s explanation of these words is quite simple and savours of no scolasticism of B. He also gives a protracted simile to explain the inter-relation of the twelve factors of the Law of Causation—the simile of the seed growing into a tree and then into a seed again.

Here are given below the twelve factors with their explanation and illustration :—

| Factors | Explanation | Illustration |
|----------------------|---|---|
| <i>Avijjā</i> : | <i>catūsu saccsu aññāṇam</i> ; | is compared to 穀 paddy (<i>vihi</i>). |
| <i>Sankhārā</i> : | <i>kāya-vacīcittakammāni</i> ; | are compared to a seed (<i>bija</i>). |
| <i>Viññāṇam</i> : | <i>paṭisandhikkhaṇe pavattitam</i> <i>cittam</i> ; | is compared to a sprout (<i>ankura</i>). |
| <i>Nāmarūpam</i> : | <i>cittacetasikā dhammā</i> , <i>kalalarūpañ ca</i> ; | is compared to a leaf (<i>patta</i>). ¹ |
| <i>Salāyatanaṁ</i> : | <i>cha ajjhatika-āyatanañi</i> ; | is compared to a branch (<i>sākhā</i>). |
| <i>Phasso</i> : | <i>cha phassakāyā</i> ; | is compared to a tree (<i>rukka</i>). |
| <i>Vedanā</i> : | <i>cha vedanākāyā</i> ; | is compared to a flower (<i>puppham</i>). |
| <i>Tanhā</i> : | <i>cha tanhākāyā</i> ; | is compared to juice (<i>rasa</i>). |
| <i>Upādānām</i> : | <i>cattāri upādānāni</i> ; | is compared to [the ear of] rice (<i>sāli</i> or <i>taṇḍula</i>). |
| <i>Bhavo</i> : | <i>kāma-rūpa-arūpabhava-</i> <i>saṁuṭṭhāpakaṁ kammaṁ</i> ; | is compared to a seed (<i>bija</i>) again. |
| <i>Jāti</i> : | <i>bhave khandhābhinibbati</i> ; | is compared to a sprout (<i>ankura</i>). |
| <i>Jarā</i> : | <i>khandhānaṁ paripāko</i> ; | for this no simile is used. |
| <i>Maraṇam</i> : | <i>khandhānaṁ viddhamsana-</i> <i>paribheda</i> ; | for this no simile is used. |

Upa. shows by this simile that this is a round of which the beginning or the end is not known. B. gives no such one simile for the whole. In 'XVII. 303, where B. gives different similes

1 See Mvy. 33,4942.

for the different factors, he uses the simile of a *bija* and *ankura* for *bhava* and *jāti*.

Upa. also raises the question: *kim paccayā avijjā?* In answer he says:

(i) *avijjā yeva avijjā-paccayo.*¹ And further he says that

(ii) all kilesas also are the paccayas of *avijjā* and to support his statement he gives the quotation: *āsavasamudayā avijjā-samudayo.* [Cf. B. XVII. 36, quoting from M. i. 54.]

Upa. then raises some ten questions which he briefly answers. Of these twelve factors, *avijjā*, *taṇhā* and *upādāna* are the three kilesas, *sankhārā* and *bhava* are the two kammas and the remaining seven are vipākas. *Avijjā* and *sankhārā* are in the past, *jāti* and *jarā-marana* are in the future, while the rest are in the present. [With this compare B. XVII. 284, 287 which is exactly the same.] This succession of old-age and death should be known to be without a beginning. These twelve dhammas, because they are the causes of one another in succession, are the *hetupaccaya-samuppāda* or *paticcasamuppāda*. The difference between the twelve *hetupaccaya-angāni* and *samuppannadharmmā* is that the *hetupaccayas* are the different kinds of *sankhāras* about which, when they have not yet come into existence, we cannot say that they are *sankhata* or *asankhata*; while they come into existence, they become the *hetupaccaya-dhammā* or *paticca-samuppādadharmmā* (? 以起因緣法行);² when they have already come into existence they are *sankhata*.³ Upa. also speaks of the *hetupaccayas* as *gambhirasabhāvā*. [Cf. B. XVII. 11, 304-314.]

XVII. 284,
287

Further these *hetupaccayas* should be known in seven ways:

(i) *Sandhito.* There is one *sandhi* between *sankhāras* and *viññāṇa*, another between *vedanā* and *taṇhā* and the third between *bhava* and *jāti*. [Cf. Vis. XVII. 288-89.] B. speaks of *hetuphalasandhi*, *phalahetusandhi*, and *hetuphalasandhi*. Upa. calls the first and the third sandhis *hetuphalasandhi* and *bhavasandhi*, while the second is *phalahetusandhi* and not *bhavasandhi*. Upa. goes into a long discussion of the *bhavasandhi* and describes how one individual passes from one existence to another. In that connection he speaks of *kamma*,

XVII. 288-
89

XVII. 136-
45
diff.

1. Cf. Netti, 79: *Iti avijjā avijjāya hetu, ayñiso manasikāro paccayo.*

2. This is not clear.

3. Cf. S. ii. 26.

XVII.
155-56
p.a.

XVII. 290
diff.

XVII. 291-
97
s.a.

XVII. 298
q.d.

N.O.

kammanimitta, gati and *gatinimitta*, while B. speaks of only three with the omission of *gati*. [Cf. B. XVII. 136-45.] We also meet with here [Vim. 10.21.4] the famous simile in Buddist literature,—the simile of one lamp kindling another lamp. There is also a description as to how the material form [of an individual] is produced. [Cf. Vis. XVII. 155-56]

(ii) *Catusankhepato*. This corresponds to B.'s XVII. 290 although we do not find there the terms used by Upa., namely—*atitakammakilesa*, *paccuppannaphalavipāka*, *paccuppannakkamma-kilesa*, and *anāgataphalavipāka*.

(iii) *Visatiya akārehi*. This is in substantial agreement with B.'s XVII. 291-97, although Upa. is very brief. We find in this connection the quotations from Ps. i. 52, given by B. in XVII. 292, 296, 297. There seems to be something wrong with the Chinese Text, for instead of the closing line in the quotation in the para. 292, we have the closing line of the quotation in the para. 294, but the whole passage corresponding to the quotation in para. 294 is missing. Similarly, there is some variation in the last quotation.

(iv) *Cakkato*. *Avijjāpaccayā sankhārā...jātipaccayā jarāmaranā*. *Evam etassa kevalassa dukkhakkhandhassa samudayo hoti*. It is ignorance of this heap of suffering that is *avijjā*. And from *avijjā* there arise sankhāras and so on. [Cf. B. XVII. 298, which is quite different.]

(v) 以 *牽* (?). *Avijjā* leading forward to the future and *jarāmarana* in the other direction to the past.

(vi) *Paricchedato*. [N. C.]

(a) *Duvidha*:

Lokiya: that *avijjā* is at the beginning;

Lokuttara: that *dukkha* depends upon *dukkha*, *saddhā* upon *saddhā*, and so on. [Does this correspond to the quotation from Ptñ. given by B. in XVII. 84 ?]

(b) *Catubbidha*:

kammīkilesato hetu: as *avijjā* is at the beginning.

bijato hetu: as in the relation of a seed and sprout.

bhava-nikanti (有 作): 如 化 色 like *opapātikarūpa* (?).
 共 業 爲 因 As in things born together,
 (? *sahajāta-kamma-hetu*) as the earth and snow,
 mountain and ocean, the sun and moon.¹

(vii) *Lakkhanasangahato*: the twelve factors are distributed over the classification of being characterised as khandhas, āyatanas, dhātus and saccas; as, for instance, so many of the twelve factors are included in the *sankhārakkhandha* and so on. In the same way with the rest. N.C.

1. The idea is not clear.

CHAPTER XI

PANCA UPAYA

PART TWO

[Bk. 11.1.5.—11.6a. 8; Tak. 452a-452b; Cf. Vis. XVI. 13—end of the Chap.]

5. SACCANI

Cattāri ariyasaccāni : dukkham, dukkha-samudayo, dukkha-nirodho, dukkha-nirodha-maggo.

XVI. 31-60
g.a.

These four truths are described in the same words from Vibhanga as are quoted by B. in XVI. 31. The comment on the text of the First Truth: *Jāti pi dukkhā. jarā pi dukkhā,sankhittena pañca upādānakkhandhā dukkhā*, generally agrees—although it is very brief—with that of B. XVII. 31-60, except in a few cases, as on the word *jarā*. Upa's comment on that word, if rendered in Pali, would be as follows: *Dhātūnaṃ paripākabhāvā bala-rūpa-indriya-sati-paññānam hāni*.

After giving the comment on this textual passage, Upa. proceeds to the classification of *dukkha*. It is

(a) *Duvidha*:

vatthudukkha: jātidukkhaṇi, marañadukkham, appiyānam sampayogo, piyānam vippayogo, yam pi icchaṇi nālabhati tam pi dukkham, sankhittena pañca upādānakkhandhā dukkhā.
sabhāvadukkham: sokadukkham, parideva-dukkham, domanassa-dukkham, upāyāsa-dukkham.

XVI. 35

(b) *Tividha*:

dukkhdukkham: kāyikam, cetasikam.
vipariṇāmadukkham: sāsavā sukhā vedanā } [Cf. Vis. XVI. 35;
sankhāradukkham: pañca upādanakkha- vippariṇāmavatthu. } see also Abhk.
n.dhā. } VII. 78]

XVI. 61

The comment on the text of the Second Truth generally agrees with that of B. XVI. 61. With reference to the Third Truth, Upa. is very concise. He merely gives the text and

gives no comment on it. He gives no discussion on *Nibbāna* as B. gives in XVI. 67-70. He, however, like B. XVI. 63, states that the Blessed One preached about the Cessation of Suffering by way of the Cessation of the Origin of Suffering.

When Upa. comes to the Fourth Truth he explains the Eightfold Path with two alternative interpretations of each of these factors of the Path. His interpretation often differs from that of B. [XVI. 75-83]. Here it follows:

XVI. 75-83
p.a.

Sammā-ditṭhi: *Catusaccesu nānām*; *Nibbāne nānādassanaṁ*.

Sammā-saṇ- *tividha-kusala-saṇ-* *Nibbāne sankappo*.

kappo : *kappo*;

Sammā-vācā; *catubbidhā pāpacā-* *micchā vācāya pahā-*
ritā virati; *naṁ*.

Sammā-kam- *tividhā pāpacaritā* *micchā kammassa*

manto : *virati*; *pahānaṁ*.

Sammā-ājīvā: *micchājīvā virati*; *micchājīvassa pahānaṁ*.

Sammā-vāyāmo: *cattāri sammappa-* *micchā viriyassa*
dhānāni; *pahānaṁ*.

Sammā-sati: *cattāri satipatṭhā-* *Nibbāne sati*.
nānī;

Sammā-samādhi: *cattāri jhānāni*; *Nibbāne cittekaggatā*.

Then he goes on to show how the Noble Eightfold Path covers all the thirty-seven bodhidhammas. [Cf. Vis. XVII. 86 and XXII. 33-38.]

Upa. raises the same question as is raised by B. in XVI. 27, XVI. 27-28 as to why these Truths are just four, neither three nor five. p.a. The answer of Upa. agrees in general with that of B. in the first half of XVI. 28. B. gives several other reasons in addition to the two of Upa.

These Truths should be understood in eleven ways:

(i) *Vacanatthato*. Upa. gives the interpretations of the XVI. 22 words *ariya-sacca*, *dukkha*, *samudaya*, *nirodha* and *magga*. His interpretations are, as usual, more simple and more natural. [This corresponds to B. XVI. 16-22].

(ii) *Lakkhaṇato*. This corresponds to B. XVI. 23, where XVI. 23 B. also gives *rasa*, and *paccuapaṭṭhāna*. Upa. agrees with B. p.a. only in part.

(iii) *Kamato*. [compare B. XVI. 29, 30.] Upa. gives two XVI. 29-30 reasons of which only the first *olārikaṭṭhēṇa* is common with that of B.'s *olārikattā*. The second reason given by Upa. is

sacchikātabbatṭhena. Upa. gives a very fine simile to illustrate the appropriateness of the order of these Truths. Just as a skilful physician first sees the symptoms of a disease, then hears the cause of it, and then seeing the necessity of the cure of the disease prescribes a suitable medicine; so the four Truths may be known as coming in the same order.

XVI. 85
p.a.

(iv) *Sankhepato*. There does not appear to be any paragraph in Vis. except a part of XVI. 85, which expresses an idea similar to that expressed in the last of the three cases under this heading. Upa. explains in the first two cases the denotation of these Truths and in the last case he tells what these Truths can accomplish. Concerning the last he says: *Dukkham sakkāyadiṭṭhidvāra-pidahanasamattham, samudayo ucchedadīṭṭhidvāra-pidahanasamattho, nirodho sassatadīṭṭidvāra-pidapanasamattho, maggo micchādīṭṭhidvāra-pidahanasamattho*. [Cf.B. XVI. 85 where instead of *micchādīṭṭhi* B. has *akiriya-dīṭṭhi*.

XVI. 87

(v) *Upamāto*. We find here the similes of *visarukkha*, *orimatīra* and of *bhāra* as given in B. XVI. 87, where B. gives several others in addition.

(vi) *Paricchedato*.

Cattāri saccāni: Sammuti-saccam, pacceka-saccam (?)
各各歸) *paramattha-saccam, ariya-saccam*.

Here it is the last that is meant.

XVI. 86
a.

(vii) *Gaṇanāto*. This corresponds, in part only, to B. XVI. 86. There B. gives the various dhammas that are included under the Four Truths. Upa. gives the various alternatives of the different dhammas that are covered by the first two Truths, while the last two are invariably the cessation of what is included under the second, and the way to the cessation of the same, respectively.

(viii) *Ekattato*. This is given to be of four kinds:

saccatthato, avitathatthato [Cf. XVI. 102],
dhammatthato, suññatthato [Cf. Vis. XVI. 90].

(ix) *Nānattato*.

(A) *Duvidha*:

(a) *lokiyam*: *sāsavam, samyojaniyam...* [Dhs. paragraph 584]...*sankilesikam*.

lokuttaram: *anāsavam...* (just the opposite of above)...*asankilesikam*.

(b) *sankhata*: *tiṇi saccāni*.
asankhata: *Nirodha-saccam*.

(c) *arūpa*: *tiṇi saccāni*.
sarūpa: *dukkha-saccam*.

(B) *Catubbidha*:

(a) *akusala*: *samudaya-saccam*.
kusala: *Magga-saccam*.
abyākata: *Nirodha-saccam*.
kusala-akusala:
abyākata: *dukkha-saccam*.

XVI. 28,
102

(b) *pariññeyyaṃ*: *dukkha-saccam*
pahātabbaṃ: *samudaya-saccam*
sacchikātabbam: *Nirodha-saccam*.
bhāvetabbaṃ: *Magga-saccam*.

} [Cf. B. XVI.
28, 102.]

(x) *Kama-vitthārato*. The following will represent the classification of the four Truths under this heading:

| | | | |
|---|-----------------|----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| <i>dukkha</i> | <i>samudaya</i> | <i>Nirodha</i> | <i>Magga</i> |
| <i>Ekavidha</i> : <i>sa-viññāṇa-ka-kāya</i> | <i>abhimāna</i> | <i>pahāna</i> of <i>kāyagatā</i> | <i>what is men- tioned under</i> |
| | | | <i>sati</i> . |
| | | | <i>samudaya</i> . |

| | | | |
|---------------------|------------------------------|---------------------|----------------------|
| <i>Duvidha</i> : | <i>nāmarūpa</i> | <i>avijjā,</i> | <i>samatha,</i> |
| | | <i>bhavatañjhā</i> | <i>„ „ „</i> |
| | | | <i>vipassanā</i> . |
| <i>Tividha</i> : | <i>dukkha-</i> | <i>tividha-aku-</i> | <i>sīla, samā-</i> |
| | <i>dukkha</i> | <i>salamūlāni</i> | <i>dhi, paññā.</i> |
| <i>Catubbidha</i> : | <i>sakkāya-bhā-va-vatthu</i> | <i>cattāro vi-</i> | <i>cattāro sati-</i> |
| | | <i>pallāsā</i> | <i>„ „ „</i> |
| | | | <i>paṭṭhānā.</i> |
| | <i>(? 身性處)</i> | | |

| | | | |
|---------------------|-------------------------------|---------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>Pañcavidha</i> : | <i>pañca gatiyo</i> | <i>pañca nīva-</i> | <i>pañca indri-</i> |
| | | <i>rañāni</i> | <i>„ „ „ yāni.</i> |
| <i>Chabbidha</i> : | <i>cha phassā-yatanāni</i> | <i>cha tañjhā-</i> | <i>cha paṭinisi-</i> |
| | | <i>kāyā</i> | <i>„ „ „ saggadhammā.</i> |
| <i>Sattavidha</i> : | <i>satta viññā-ṇaṭṭhitiyo</i> | <i>satta anu-</i> | <i>satta bojjhan-</i> |
| | | <i>sayā</i> | <i>„ „ „ gānū</i> |
| <i>Atṭhavidha</i> : | <i>atṭha loka-</i> | <i>atṭha micohā</i> | <i>atṭhangiko</i> |
| | <i>dhammā</i> | <i>antā</i> | <i>magao</i> |

Navavidha: *nava sattā-* *nava tanhāmū-* *pahāna nava sammā-*
vāsā *lakā dhammā* of what is *manasikāra-*
 mentioned *mūlakā-*
 under *dhammā*¹
samudaya

Dasavidha: *dasadisacariyā dasa samyo-* *dasa saññā.*
 (十方行) *janāni* ,, ,

(xi) *Sangahato*:²

(a) *Khandha-sangaha*; *dukkha* is included under all the five khandhas, *samudaya* and *Magga* under *sankhārakkhandha* and *Nirodha* under no *khandha*.

(b) *Ayatana-sangaha*: *dukkha* is included under all the twelve *āyatanas*, and the remaining three under *dhammāyatana*.

(c) *Dhātu-sangaha*: *dukkha* is included under all the eighteen dhātus, while the remaining under *dhamma-dhātu*.

In this way one understands the noble Truths. These are called the *ariya-sacca-upāyā*.

1 Cf. S. V. 91. Cf. Vis. XVII. 107 *ayoniso-manasikāra-mūlakā*.

2 For this threefold *sangaha*, see Dhātukathā 1, 2 ff. and its commentary, p. 115; also compare Pet. VI. 124 (Bur. ed. 176), *Buddhānam* *Bhagavantānaṃ sāsanaṃ tividhena sangahaṃ gacchati—khardhesu, dhātusu, āyatanesu* &c; also see Sp. 37 (comment on stanza 14): *Bhagavato Vineyavā sāttisro deśanāḥ*: *skandhāyutanadhātudeśanāḥ*.

CHAPTER XII

SACCAPARICCHEDO

PART ONE

[Bk. 11.6a.9—11.19a.8 (end of Bk. 11); Tak. 453b-456c;
Cf. Vis. Chapters XVIII, XIX, XX in part and XXI. 1-28].

DITTHIVISUDDHI

The *yogāvacara*, when he has understood the khandhas, dhātus, āyatanas, hetupaccayas and saccas, should know that there exist these things only and that there is no *satta*, no *jīva*, that there are only *nāma* and *rūpa*, that one does not consist of the other, and yet one is not independent of the other. [Compare Vis. XVIII. 33, 32: *Nāmam rūpena suññam, rūpam nāmena suññam; āññamāññam nissāyeva pavattati*. To illustrate this nature of *nāma* and *rūpa*, Upa. has given here the simile of a drum and sound, as well as that of a blind man and a lame man. [These similes are given in full in Vis. XVIII. 33, 35.] Upa. dilates much upon the distinction between *nāma* and *rūpa*. The former has no body, is flighty and very easy to move, while the latter has body, and slow to move. The former can think, know and understand, while the latter cannot do so. The former can know 'I walk, sit, stand or lie down,' although it cannot do so itself. The *rūpa* alone can do these movements. Similarly *nāma* cannot do the actions of eating, drinking, tasting, etc. which can be done by the *rūpa* alone, but it can know 'I eat, drink, taste, etc.' Thus he knows that it is only the sankhāras that exist, and they are nothing but suffering. When he has this insight into suffering (*dukkhe nānam*), there is *yathābhūta-ñāṇadassana-visuddhi*, or *nāma-rūpa-vavatthānam*. [Cf. B. XVIII. 37, XX 130].

KANKHAVITARANA-VISUDDHI

Even after this if the *yogāvacara* has still any thought about *satta*, he should further reflect upon the causes (*nidāna*) of suffering. He should reflect upon the Law of Causation, or of Dependent Origination, both in the regular order as well as in the reverse order. He may reflect upon this Law of Dependent Origination in full, or, even in brief, beginning with *vedanāpaccyā tañhā* [Cf. Vis. XVII. 28, 30, 32, 37, 41]. Thus

XVIII. 32,
33

Similes in
XVIII. 33,
35

N.C.

XIX
XIVth ch.
diff.

he has an insight into the origin of suffering (*dukkha-samudaye nāñam*), which is the same as *dhammatthitiñāñam* or *hetupacayapariggāhe nāñam*, or *kankhāvitarañavavisuddhi*. All these expressions mean the same thing though they are different in words. [Cf. Vis. XIX. 25-26.]

When the *yogāvacara* has thus understood the Origin of Suffering, he further reflects upon the Cessation of Suffering. By reflecting upon the Law of Dependent Origination in the negative way, that is to say, that the cessation of suffering is possible by the cessation of birth, and so on, up to that the cessation of sankhāras is possible by the cessation of ignorance (*avijjā*), he sees that *Nirodha* also is *hetupaccaya-paṭibaddha*, and that by the cessation of craving (*tañhā*), it can be attained. When he has thus realized the Truth of the Cessation of Suffering, he tries to find out the Path for the cessation of craving. He knows that seeing danger in the five upādānakkhañdas is the Way, the Path.

He then reflects upon the upādānakkhandhas in one hundred and eighty ways. Upon *rūpa* for instance he reflects in this way :

Atthi rūpam atītam, anāgatañ, paccuppannam, aijhattam, bahiddhā, mahantam, parittam, olārikam, sukhumam, dūre, santike, sabbam rūpam aniccan ti passati. [This is the same quotation from Ps. i. 53.4 as is given in B. XX. 6.] In the same way he reflects upon the other four khandhas. Thus there would be 12 multiplied by 5 i.e. 60 kinds of reflections. Add to these, 60 in each of the other two reflections by way of *dukkha* and *anattā*. Thus we get one hundred and eighty in all.

There is also another way. He reflects as *anicca*, *dukkha*, and *anattā* on the following groups: [Cf. the list in Vis. XX. 9] 6 *ajjhatti-āyatanañi*, 6 *bāhira-āyatanañi*, 6 *viññāñkāyā*, 6 *phassakāyā*, 6 *vedanākāyā*, 6 *saññākāyā*, 6 *cetanākāyā*, 6 *tañhākāyā*, 6 *vitakkā*, 6 *vicārā*. Thus we get one hundred and eighty ($3 \times 6 \times 10$).

He considers all sankhāras as changing from year to year, month to month, day to day, nay, even from moment to moment. In fact they appear to be new every moment [B. XX. 104: *niccanavā*], like the continuous flame of a lamp [the constituent particles of which are new every moment].

He also considers them as *dukkhā, anattā*. By *aniccānupassanā* his mind is inclined to *animittā dhātu*, by *dukkhānupassanā* to *appayhīñi dhātu*, and by *anattānupassanā* to *suññatā*.

N.C.

XX. 9
diff.

dhātu. He understands by his discriminating knowledge that every kind of existence such as *tayo bhavā*, *pañca gatiyo*, *satta viññānaṭṭhitayo*, *nava sattāvāsā*, is fearful and unreal.

Pariccheda-ñāṇam niṭṭhitam.

UDAYABBAYANĀNAM

The *yogāvacara*, having discriminated the upādānakhandhas with these three lakkhaṇas, wishes to cut them off. He takes the *nimitta* and penetrates to the *udaya* and *vaya*.

Upa. gives three kinds of *nimitta-gaṇa*:

(i) *Kilesa-nimitta-gaṇa*. This is the perverse view N.C. (*vipallāsasaññā*) of an ordinary man, that things are permanent when they are not. He is attached to the kilesas. This is like the falling of a moth into a lamp.

(ii) *Samādhi-nimitta-gaṇa*. On one of the thirty-eight nimittas (i.e. *kammathānas*¹) he concentrates his mind and thus binds it with the object. This is like the goad applied to an elephant.

(iii) *Vipassanā-nimitta-gaṇa*. If a man, who entertains a belief that things are permanent, sees with insight into each of the five khandhas with their characteristics, he would wish to give them up, like a man who has seized a poisonous serpent. [For this simile compare Vis. XXI. 49-50.]

Upa. goes into details of the way of taking the nimittas and penetrating to the lakkhaṇas. Of the former he gives two ways: *ārammaṇato* and *manasikārato*, and of the latter three: *hetuto*, *paccayato*, and *sa-rasato*, in each of the two cases of *udaya* and *vaya*.

He penetrates to the *udaya* and *vaya* of sankhāras. When he has seen *udaya* and *vaya*, he understands four things:

| | |
|---|--|
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> (i) <i>ekalakkhaṇadhamma</i> (ii) <i>nānatta-dhamma</i> (iii) <i>akiriya-dhamma</i> (iv) <i>sammā-dhamma</i> | <p>[From the explanation given of these terms, they appear to correspond to <i>ekattanaya</i>, <i>nānattanaya</i>, <i>abyāpāranaya</i> and <i>evam-dhammatānaya</i> of B.XVII. 309-313; also they appear in XX.I02.]</p> |
|---|--|

XVII. 309-
313
XX. 102

These terms are explained at great length. He perfects his knowledge of the sankhāras and knows that all the sankhāras

1. See Chap. VII. above, p. 38 ff.

are limited, at the beginning by *udaya*, and at the end by *vaya*. Thus *udayabbaye nāṇam sankhāra-pariccheda-nāṇam hoti*.

BHĀNGĀNUPASSĀNA-NĀNAM [Cf. Vis. XXI. 10-28]

The *yogāvacara*, having seen the *udayabbaya-lakkhaṇa*, and having thoroughly understood the *sankhāras*, pays no attention to the *udaya*, but thinks only of *vaya* of the mind. Here in this connection, we find the passage, though in an abbreviated form, from Ps. i. 57-58, quoted by B. in XXI. 11.

XX. 76 Upa. then proceeds to give the three ways in which he sees
p.a. the *vaya* or *bhanga*. [With this, compare Vis. XX. 76, where
we have seven divisions, of which the first two are worded in
the same way as the first two here, but the explanations agree
only in part.] The three ways are :

XX. 78 (i) *Kalāpato*. [The second explanation of Upa. agrees with
p.a. the second explanation of B. given in Vis. XX. 78.]

XX. 79 (ii) *Yamakato*. This roughly agrees with Vis. XX. 79.

(iii) *Paricchedato*. He sees the *vaya* of many minds.

Thus the *yogāvacara* sees with his insight all wordly things, even to the smallest speck, as changing, growing, aging and passing out of existence. Further, he sees them as described in the *gāthās* given by Upa.

XVIII. 32, [Here we have a number of *gāthās*, quite a few of which are
33, 36 the same as given by B. at the end of the XVIIIth chapter, in
s.a. paragraphs 32, 33 and 36. All the stanzas in para 33 are
found in substantially the same form—though not in the same
order—with only a few variations; as for instance, instead of
phassapañcamā, Upa. has *rūpagandhādi-pañcadhammā*.
Similarly, the *gāthā* in paragraph 32 is the same except that the
last quarter shows a little variation in words but the meaning
appears to be the same. In these stanzas, we meet with the
similes of a flash of lightning and a *gandhabba-nagara*. [See
Vis. XX. 104, XXI. 34.] The first stanza of paragraph 36 is
also the same except that instead of *sakena balena* Upa. has
sakena kāyena. In the second stanza of the same paragraph,
instead of *parapaccayato ca jāyare* and *para-ārammaṇato*,
Upa. has respectively *na attato jāyare* and *na attārammaṇato*.

B. has ascribed these stanzas in paragraphs 32, 33 to the *Porāṇas*, and though it is not so definitely stated about the stanzas in paragraph 36, still presumably they are from the same source.]

The *yogāvacara* sees the *vaya* in this way. When he has XX. 105 not yet completely mastered the *saṃādhi*, there appear to him s.a. the following ten things [which B. calls *upakkilesā*]: *obhāso*, *ñāṇam*, *pīti*, *passādhi*, *sukham*, *adhimokkho*, *paggaho*, *upatthānam*, *upekkhā*, and 出離. This is the same list as is given in Vis. XX. 105, except that the last as given by B. is *nikanti*¹ while this Chinese text gives what would mean *nekkhamma* or *nissaraṇa* or *paṭinissagga*.

An unintelligent man is distracted by these things but an intelligent man is not disturbed by them. He knows *lokイヤ-dhamma-sankhārārammaṇa* as well as *lokuttara-dhamma-Nibbā-nārammaṇa*. He removes distraction, if there be any, sees only *vaya* and skilfully and abundantly develops it.

Bhangānupassanā-ñāṇam niṭṭhitam.

1. Is this misunderstood by the Chinese Translator as *nikkhanti* or *nekkhamma*?

CHAPTER XII

SACCAPARICCHEDO

PART TWO

[Bk. 12.1.4—12.20.2 (end); Tak. 456c.-461c. Cf. B.
XXI. 29 onwards, XXII and XXIII.]

BHAYATUPTTHĀNĀNĀNĀM [Cf. Vis. XXI. 21-34]

XXI. 29 The *yogāvacara*, reflecting upon the *vaya* or *bhanga*, becomes afraid of the khandhas and of all kinds of existence, such as the three *bhavas*, five *gatis*, seven *viññānaṭṭhitis* and nine *sattāvāsas*, becomes afraid, as of a frightful man carrying a sword in his hand, or as of a poisonous serpent, or as of a heap of fire. [The last two of these similes occur in Vis. XXI. 29, and, for the first, we have only the word 'ghora' which may stand for this simile of a frightful man.] He is afraid of all *nimittas* and all kinds of *uppāda* and thinks of *animitta* and *anuppāda*.

MUÑCITUKAMYATA-ÑĀNĀM [Cf. Vis. XXI. 44-46.]

[It should be noted that Upa. does not give any treatment of *ādīnavānupassanā-ñāṇa* or *nibbidānupassanā-ñāṇa*, perhaps because, as B. says, these two are the same as *bhayatupatthānā-ñāṇa*. See Vis. XXI. 44, where B. quotes as his authority passages from the *Porāṇas* and *Pāli* (Ps. ii. 63).]

When the *yogāvacara* sees all *sankhāras* as fearful, he naturally wishes to be free from them, like a bird that is surrounded by fire, or like a person that is surrounded by robbers.

Muñcitukamyatā-ñāṇam nīṭṭhitam.

ANULOMA-ÑĀNĀM

[It should be noted that Upa. at once proceeds to *anuloma-ñāṇa*, without giving the other intervening *ñāṇas*, *patisankhānupassanā-ñāṇa* and *sankhāraupekkhā-ñāṇa*, mentioned by B. in the list of eight *ñāṇas* preceding the *saccānulomikañāṇa*. See Vis. XXI. 1.]

The *yogāvacara*, by the cultivation of *muñcitukamyatā-ñāṇa*, wishes to be free from all *sankhāras* and is inclined towards *nibbāna*. He considers all khandhas as *anicca*, *dukkha*

and *anattā* and considers their cessation as *nicca*, *sukha* and *paramattha*.

What is the meaning of *anuloma-ñāṇa*? Upa. answers: Diff. *cattāro satipaṭṭhāna*, etc. [All the thirty-seven bodhi-dhammas given in Vis. XXII. 33 are mentioned here.]

Anulomañṇam nitṭhitam.

GOTRABHŪ-NAÑAM

Upa. explains the word *gotrabhū* and his explanation generally agrees with that of B. XXII. 5. He also gives a quotation from Ps. i. 66, though in an abbreviated form, which corresponds to that given by B. in XXII. 5.

XXII. 5

Gotrabhū-ñāṇam nitṭhitam.

Immediately after this *gotrblhū-ñāṇa*, he has an insight into Suffering, cuts off the Origin of Suffering, experiences its Cessation, and cultivates the Path for the Cessation of Suffering, and the *sotāpatti-magga-ñāṇa* as well as all the *Bodhidhammā* are produced. At one and the same moment, not before or after, he makes *sacca-pariccheda*. To illustrate this simultaneous nature of *sacca-pariccheda*, Upa. gives three similes—that of a boat crossing the floods, of the lamp that is burning, and of the sun that is shining. [These similes are given by B. in exactly the same words in XXII. 96, 92 and 95 respectively. He ascribes the simile of the lamp definitely to the *Porāṇas*,¹ while in the case of others though he does not say so, they are clearly from the same source.]

Similes in
XXII. 92,
95, 96

Upa. gives a very fine simile to illustrate the difference between *gotrabhū-ñāṇa* and *magga-ñāṇa*.² The former is compared to a man who has put only one foot outside the threshold of the gate of a city which is burning, while the latter is compared to another man who has put both of his feet outside the gate. Just as the former man cannot be said to have properly escaped the burning city so the *yogāvacara* has not properly escaped the burning city of kilesas, if he has only the *gotrabhū-ñāṇa*. But when he has the *magga-ñāṇa*, he has properly escaped the kilesas, like the second man in the above

1 For these similes also see Pet. VIith Chap. p. 150 (Bur. ed. 187), Abdhm. 132-33.

2 B.'s simile is altogether different; see XXII. 12-13.

simile. It is this *maggā-ñāṇa* which makes the *sacca-pariccheda*.

The *yogāvacara* then destroys the three *saṃyojanas*: *sakkāyaditṭhi*, *vicikicchā*, and *silabbata-parāmāsa* and attains the *sotāpatti-phala*.¹ When he has destroyed the *sakkāyaditṭhi* he has destroyed all the sixty-two *ditṭhis*. For, *sakkāyaditṭhi* is the chief of all the heresies. Upa. then goes on describing how he gradually proceeds on his path towards Arhatship. His description generally corresponds to that of B. XXII.15-29. Although Upa. is very brief, we often find the same expressions as those of B. For instance, the passage about the five *paccavekkhaṇas* of the *sotāpanna* is exactly the same as in B. XXII. 19.

XXII. 15-29
XXII. 19 id.
XXIII. 55

Upa. next goes on to tell us about the three kinds of *sotāpannas*: *mudidriyo sattakkhattuparamo*, *majjhimindriyo kolaṅkolo*, and *tikkhindriyo ekabījī*² [cf. Vis. XXIII. 55].

XXIII. 56
diff.

He has also the same five kinds of *anāgāmīs* as given by B. in XXIII. 56, but he adds that these five kinds of *anāgāmīs* are seen in each of the first four classes of *Suddhāvāsa* gods, namely, Avihas, Atappas, Sudassas, and Sudassīs, while in the last class, namely that of *Akaniṭṭha* gods, there are only four, because there is no *Uddhaṃsota*, as the highest stage has been already reached. From the state of an *Anāgāmī* he goes to Arhatship. He has destroyed all the kilesas completely, cut off all *sankhāras* and made an end of all suffering.

N.C.

To show the unknown nature of the destiny of an Arhat, Upa. gives a very appropriate simile. Just as when iron is beaten (red-hot) and dipped into water and cooled, we do not know where the sparks of fire go, so we do not know anything about the destiny of an Arhat when he has reached the Unshakable Happy State.³

XXII. 103

Upa. next refers to the views of some teachers who believe in the *nānābhismaya* referred to by B. in XXII. 103. B. simply refers to the *Kathāratthu* for the refutation of their

1 Cf. Pet. 145, (Bur. ed. 185): *Tattha sotāpanno kathaṃ hoti?*.....

2 Cf. Pet. IIInd Chapter, p. 33-34 (Bur. ed. p. 135).

3 Cf. Sn. 1074: *Acci yathā vātavegena khitto attham paleti na upeti sagkhām, & evam muni nāmakāyā vimutto attham paleti na upeti sankham.*

arguments, but Upa. proceeds to show the flaws in their argument. He points out seven flaws, at least two of which can be identified with some of the refutations of this theory given in the Kathāvatthu, i. 213, para. 5 ff., 216, para. 10. There is one more passage containing the objection raised by an opponent, 'dukkhasaccam cattāri ariya-saccānīti?' [Kv. i.218. para. 14] that can be traced in Upa. Another passage given in answer to the above objection, 'Rūpakkhandhe aniccato ditthē, pañcakkhandhā aniccato ditthā honti ti?' can also be traced. And in the same way, says Upa., the āyatanas and dhātus. The Kathāvatthu gives them in detail.

PAKINNAKADHAMMA

Upa. continues: *Ettha pakiṇṇaka-dhammā veditabbā*. He gives the following: *vipassanā, vitakka, piti, vedanā, bhūmi, indriyāni, vimokkho, kilesā, dvi-samādhi-samāpajjanam*. Upa. takes them one after another and goes into the detailed treatment of them showing what part they play in the progress of the *yogāvacara* towards his ideal of Arhatship.

VIPASSANA

Upa. gives two kinds of *vipassanā*: *jhāna-vipassanā* and *sukkha-vipassanā*. If the *yogāvacara* destroys the nīvaraṇas by the power of *saṃādhi*, then he cultivates *saṃatha-pubbaṅgama-vipassanā*. If, on the contrary, he destroys nīvaraṇas by the power of his insight, he cultivates *vipassanā-pubbaṅgama-saṃatha*.

VITAKKA

This is explained as *sukkha-vipassanā*. Upa. shows in what stages on the onward path of the *yogāvacara*, it is found and in what stages it is not found.

| | | | | |
|------|--------|---|--|----------------------|
| PITI | VEDANA | } | The treatment of these together with that of the last corresponds to Vis. XXI. 112-114, but the explanations do not agree in all respects. Upa. also gives here the different aspects of the Path such as <i>sa-vitakkabhūmi</i> , <i>avitakka-bhūmi</i> , <i>suppūruṇu-bhūmi</i> , <i>nippitika-bhūmi</i> . | XXI. 112-114 p.a. |
|------|--------|---|--|----------------------|

BHŪMI

*Dassana-bhūmi*¹ in the *Sotāpatti-magga* ; or in *aniccadiṭṭhi*. *Sankappa-bhūmi* in the remaining three Paths and in the four Fruits; or in the reflection and practice of *anicca-diṭṭhi*. [The first interpretations correspond to XIV. 13.]

Or else,

Sekha-bhūmi in the four maggas and three phalas.

Asekha-bhūmi in the Fruit of Arhatship.

INDRIYĀNI

XVI. 1-10
p.a.

Three kinds of lokuttara-indriyas,² *anaññātaññassāmīti-indriya*, *aññindriya*, and *aññātāvindriya*, which respectively appear in the *sotāpattimaggañāna*, in the *ñāna* of the next three Paths as well as of the Fruits of the first, second and third Paths, and in the *ñāna* of the Fruit of Arhatship. [Cf. Vis. XVI. 1, 10 where these indriyas are given.]

VIMOKKHA

Animitta, *appañihita*, and *suññato*. These are the three kinds of vimokkhas. Long passages are given to describe these. Only the introductory words of these passages are found in the quotation from Ps. ii. 58, given in Vis. XXI. 70. In the passage from that quotation about the *suññato-vimokkha*, we have an expression *vedabahulo* for which Upa. has a word which is the equivalent of *nibbidābahulo*.

KILESA

XXIII.
49-76
much diff.

Upa. gives a long list of 134 kilesas, together with the details as to which of them are enfeebled and destroyed by which of the Four Paths. [Cf. Vis. XXII. 49-76.]

(i) *Tīṇi akusalamulāni*: *lobho, doso, moho*.

(ii) *Tisso pariyesanā*: *kāma-pariyesana, bhava^o, brahmacariya^o*

1. See Netti 50: *Dassana-bhūmi niyāmavakkantiyā padaṭṭhānam; bhāvanā-bhūmi uttarikānam phalānam pattiyyā padaṭṭhānam*. Also cf. Pet. VIth Chap. 145 (Bur. ed p. 185): *Catasso ariya-bhūmiyo, cattāri sāmañña-phalāni; tattha yo yathābhūtaṃ pajānāi, esā dassana-bhūmi*.

2. For these three indriyas also see Pet. Chaps. II and III, pp. 56, 71-72 (Bur. ed. pp. 146, 152).

3. The same three are mentioned in Vbh. 366 and Pet. VIIIth Chap. 284 (Bur. ed. 251).

(iii) *Cattāro āsavā*: *kāmo, bhavo, diṭṭhi, avijjā.*
 (iv) *Cattāro ganthā*: *abhijjhā, byāpādo, sīlabbatā-
parāmāso, idampi saccābhiniveso.*

(v) *Cattāro oghā* } *kāmo, bhavo, diṭṭhi, avijjā.*
 (vi) *Cattāro yogā* }
 (vii) *Cattāri upādānāni*: *kāmo, diṭṭhi, sīlabbatām,
attavādo.*

(viii) *Catasso agatiyo*: *chando, doso, bhayañ, moho.*
 (ix) *Pañca mācchariyāni*: *āvāsa-mācchariyāñ, kula°,
lābha°, vañña (色)°, dhamma°.*

(x) *Pañca nīvaraṇāni*: *kāma-cchando, byāpādo, thīna-
middhañ, uddhacca-kukkuccañ, vicikicchā.* [It
is to be noted here that according to B. XXII.
71, *thīnamiddha* and *uddhacca* are abandoned
at the time of Arhatship.² But according to Upa.,
it is only *thīna* and *uddhacca* that are given up
at the time of Arhatship and not *middha*.
Because he says that *middha* is *rupānuvatti*. For
Upa.'s position regarding *middha*, see above
pp. 48, 95.]

(xi) *Cha vivādamulāni*: *kodho, makkho, issā, sāt̄heyyañ,
pāpicchatā, sandiṭṭhiparāmāsata.*

(xii) *Satta anusayā* (使): *Kāmarāgo, paṭigho, māno, diṭṭhi,
vicikicchā, bhavarāgo, avijjā.*

(xiii) *Aṭṭha loka-dhammā*: *lābho, alābho, ayaso, yaso,
pasāñsa, nindā, dukkhañ, sukhañ.*

(xiv) *Nava mānā*: *Seyyassa 'seyyo 'hamasmī'ti māno, and
the remaining eight as given in Vibhanga 389-90.*

(xv) *Dasa kilesa-vatthūni*: *lobho, doso, moho, māno, diṭṭhi,
vicikicchā, thīnañ, uddhaccañ, ahirikam, anot-*

1. The Chinese text interprets the word *vañña* as *rūpa* (色 form) and this is in keeping with the alternative interpretation given in the Commentaries. See DCm. iii. p. 1027: *Vanno ti c'ettha sariravanno pi gunavañño pi veditabbo*; DhCm. 375 comments on *vanna-māchariya* as follows: *sariravanna-guṇavanna-māchherena pana pariyattidhamma-māccariyena ca attano va vaññō ti, paresam vanno 'kim vaññō eso'ti tam tañ pāsañ vadanto pariyattiñ ca kassa ṣi kiñ ci adento dubbañño c'eva elāmūgo ca hoti.*

2. See also DCm. iii. p. 1027: *Thīnañ citta-gelaññam; middhañ khandhātthaya-gelaññam. Ubhayañ pi Arahattamāga-vajjhāñ.* Cf. also MCm. ii. 216: *middhañ cetasika-gelaññam.*

tāppām. There is also another alternative to these. 'That man *has* done a great harm to me, or *is* doing, or *will do*.' The same three cases with a man whom one likes or dislikes. These nine with the addition of the tenth, the thought of doing harm, make up the number ten.

(xvi) *Dasa akusala-kammāpatha* : *pāṇātipāto, adinnādānam, [kāmesu] micchācāro, musāvādo, pisuṇā vācā* [the Chinese Text has a word which means 'double tongued'], *pharusā vācā* [the Chinese text would strictly mean *pāpikā vācā*], *samphappalāpo, abhijjhā, byāpādo, micchā ditthi*.

(xvii) *Dasa samyojanāni* (十 使)¹ : These are the same as seven anusayas mentioned above (in the xiith category) with the addition of *silabbataparāmāsa, issā* and *macchariya*. [This list differs from the usual list of the ten samyojanas, which gives *rūpa-rāga, arūpa-rāga* and *uddhacca* in the place of *bhava-rāga, issā*, and *macchariya* of this list. [See Abhs. p. 32, Chap. VII. para 2.]

(xviii) *Dasa micchātā* : the same as *micchattā* of B. XXII. 50, 66.

(xix) *Dvādasa vipallāsā* : the same as mentioned in B. XXII. 53, 68.

(xx) *Dvādasa akusala-cittuppādā* : the same as mentioned in B. XXII. 63, 76.

Thus we have a list of 134 kilesas. Upa., unlike B., describes in several cases at which of the Paths these kilesas are enfeebled before they are finally destroyed. Even as regards the stage of their complete destruction, Upa. often differs from B.

1. For the first time where the enumeration of the categories of the kilesas is given (12.13.3), the character used is 結 although here where the detailed constituents are given the character used is 使. It appears, therefore, that both the characters are indiscriminately used, although we have seen above that the latter character is used for *anusaya*. In Przyluski 'Le Concile de Rājagṛha (first part), p. 46, we find 使 used for *anusaya*, while 結 使 is used for *samyojana*. For the very slight distinction between these two words, see MCm. iii. 145: *so yeva kileso bandhanātthena samyojana, appahinātthena anusayo*.

DVE SAMAPATTIYO:

(A) *Aputhujjanasevitā phala-samāpatti.*
 (B) *Saññāvedayita-nirodha-samāpatti.*

With reference to the first (A), Upa. raises the following questions and answers them :

(i) What is *phala-samāpatti*? It is a *sāmaññaphala* with the mind (*citta*) placed on *Nibbāna*: [cf. B. XXIII. 6: *ariyaphalassa nirodhe appanā*.] This is called *phalasamāpatti*.

(ii) Why is it called *phalasamāpatti*? It is neither *kusala*, *akusala*, nor *kiriyā*.¹ It is achieved as the *lokuttara-maggaphala-vipāka* and so it is thus called.

(iii) Who attain it? The Arhats and the Anāgāmīs, because the *saññā* reaches perfection in their case (於此定作滿). Also there are some² who say on the authority of the *Abhidhamma* that all the Ariyas attain it. Upa. here quotes, as their authority, a passage which agrees with the passage from Ps. i. 68: *Sotāpattimaggapatiññabhatthāya uppādañ abhibhuyyatī ti gotrabhū, Sotāpattiphalasamāpattatthāya uppādañ abhibhuyyatī ti gotrabhū. Evam sabbattha.* [B. gives the same passage, in a fuller form, in Vis. XXIII. 7].

The same view as that of B. in XXIII. 7, is referred to by Upa.

[B. refers exactly to this view that is held by Upa. when he says: *keci pana 'sotāpanna-sakadāgamo pi na samāpajjanti, uparimā dve yeva samāpajjanti' ti vadanti. Idañ ca tesam kāraṇam: Ete hi samādhismiñ paripūrakārino ti.* B. refutes this view by saying that even a *puthujjana* can attain that state [of perfection] in a *lokiya-samādhi* attained by him, and by further adducing the passage from Ps. i. 68 [given above in brief] in support of his position. It is evident from this that Upa. was aware of this view and the argument on which it was based.]

Upa. next refers to another view* according to which all Ariyas *may* have it but only those in whom *saññā* has reached perfection *can* attain it. To support this view, Upa.

N.C.

1. Cf. a similar statement about the dhutas or dhutangas on pp. 23, 24 above. The Taisho edition gives a different punctuation and so it gives a slightly different interpretation.

2. Upa. here refers to the view held by the school of Buddhaghosa.

XXIII. 8

quotes one *Ayasmā Nārada*¹ (Nā-lo-tho 那羅陀) who says to mendicants "Just as in a mountain-forest there may be a well but no rope with the help of which water may be taken out. If at that time there comes a man overcome by the heat of the sun and fatigued by thirst, and if he sees the well and knows that there is water in it, but still cannot actually reach it,² then merely by his knowledge about the existence of water in the well and by seeing it, he cannot satisfy his thirst; so in the same way, if I know *nirodha* as *nibbāna* and even if I have a perfect *yathābhūta-ñāṇadassana*, I do not thereby become a *khīṇāsava Arahā*."

(iv) Why is it attained? The answer is the same as B.'s: *diṭṭhadhmmasukhavihārattham* [B. XXIII. 8]. Upa. gives a quotation in which the Blessed One is described as saying to Ānanda that he finds his body in a *phāsuvihāra* when he attains *animitta-cetosamādhi*.

(v) In what way does he attain it? The answer substantially agrees with that given in B. XXIII. 10.

XXIII. 9,
12, 13

(vi) In what way does he reflect (*kathamp ca manasi karoti?*) *Asankhatam amatadhātum santato manasikaroti*.

(vii) In what way does he attain it, stay in it, and emerge from it? The answer is the same in substance—although the words used are different—of what is said in quotations from M. i. 296-97, given by B. in XXIII. 9, 12, 13.

(viii) Is this *samādhi lokiya* or *lokuttara*? This *samāpatti* is *lokuttara* and not *lokiya*.

Upa. then goes into a brief discussion of a technical point. When the Ānāgāmī reflects upon the *phalasamāpatti*, why is it that the *gotrabhū* does not produce, without any intervening obstruction, the *Arahattamagga*? The answer is: because it does not produce *vipassanā-dassana*, as it is not the thing aimed at; and because it is not strong enough.

1. Who is this Nārada? Mhv. 3470 mentions one Nārada-bhikkhu under 'Maharṣi-ñāmāni'. A.iii.57-62 mentions one Nārada-bhikkhu, who is shown to be consoling King Muṇḍa on the death of his wife Bhaddā. Petavatthu refers to one in pp. 1,2,44. Also see Petavatthu-Commentary 2,15,208,210,211, etc.; Vimānavatthu-Commentary 165-169, 203; DhpCm. I.42,84,344.

2. Cf. Pet. 190 (Bur. ed. 206): *yathā gambhīre udapāne udakam cakkhunā passati, na ca kāyena abhisambhūnāti, evamassa ariyā nijjhānakkhantiyā diṭṭi: bhavati, na ca sacchikata*.

[This is the answer of Upa. to the objection raised by B. in XXIII. 11, to the view of some: *Ye¹ pana vadanti: sotāpānno phalasamāpatti^m samāpajjissāmē ti vipassanam paṭṭhapetvā sakadāgāmī hoti, sakadāgāmī ca anāgāmī ti, te vattabbā: evaṁ sati anāgāmī arahā bhavissati, arahā pacceka-buddho, pacceka-buddho ca buddho.* Upa. seems to have anticipated this objection raised, perhaps along with others, by the school B.]

Then he speaks of *duvidha phala-visesa*, which seems to be diff. quite different from B.'s *dvīhi ākārehi rasānubhavanam hoti* [B. XXIII. 3].

Upa. next proceeds to the treatment of (B) *saññā-vedayita-nirodha-samāpatti*, which very closely resembles that given by B. in XXIII. 17-51.

XXIII.
17-51
s.a.

(i) What is *saññā-vedayita-nirodha-samāpatti*? *Cittacetasikānam appavatti.* [See B. XXIII 18].

(ii) Who attain it? The Anāgāmis and the Arhats. In them, the *saṁādhi* reaches perfection. Upa. says that the Sotāpannas, Sakadāgāmis and those beings who are in the *arūpāvacara-loka* cannot attain this *saṁāpatti*. Upa. also gives reasons.

(iii) Being endowed with what powers can one attain it? The powers of *saṁatha* and *vipassanā*. The treatment of them is the same as in Vis. XXIII. 19-23.

(iv) By the cessation of what sankhāras is it attained? The answer is the same as is contained in that part of the quotation from Ps. i. 97-100, which is given by B. in XXIII. 24.

(v) What are the preliminaries (*pubba-kiccāni*)? They are the same four as given by B. in XXIII. 34, except that for *Satthupakkosanam* we have 不亂 which means *avikkhepa*.

(vi) Why is it attained? *Diṭṭhadhammasukhavihārattham.* For, it is added: *ayaṁ ariyānam sabbapacchimā āneñja-saṁādhi.* And further to produce *abhiññās* one enters upon *vippahāra-saṁādhi*, as *āyasmā* Sanjīva did to protect his body. As also Sāriputta² and 白鷲子底沙 (Moggali-putta-tissa(?))³

1. Dhammapāla (ii. p. 896) here again tells us that B. makes this statement with reference to Abhayagirivādins.

2. See Ps.ii.212. The stories given in M.i.333 and Ud. 39-40 are briefly narrated in B.XII.32 and 31 respectively.

3. Tissa, the son of a white bird (Moggala).

did. [Cf. B. XXIII. 37, where only the first two of these names are given but in a different context. The last name is not there.]

(vii) How is it attained? The answer is the same as is given in Vis. XXIII. 31-34, 43-47, except that according to B. there are not more than two *nevasaññā-nāsaññā-cittas*, while according to Upa. there may be two or three.

(viii) How does he emerge from it? He does not think 'I shall emerge from the *samādhi*' but when the time-limit that is previously determined is reached, he emerges from it.¹

(ix) With what kind of *citta* does he emerge from it? An *Anāgāmī* with *anāgāmī-citta* and an Arhat with *arahatta-citta*. [Cf. B. XXIII. 49.]

(x) How many contacts has he? Three contacts, contact with *suññatā*, *animitta*, and *appañihita*.

(xi) What Sankhāras first arise? First *kāyasankhāras* and then *vacī-sankhāras*.

(xii) What is the difference between a dead person and one who has attained this *samādhi*? The answer is the same as given by B. in Vis. XXIII. 51, in the quotation from M. i. 296.

(xiii) Is this *samādhi sankhata* or *asankhata*? It cannot be said of this *samādhi* that it is *sankhata* or *asankhata*. There is no *sankhatadhamma* in this *samādhi*, and one cannot know when *asankhatadhamma* comes and goes. [Cf. Vis. XXIII. 52.]

Nirodhajjhāna-samāpatti nitthitā.

At the end of this chapter is given the *uddāna* of the twelve chapters in the book.

Then there is a concluding *gāthā*, which purports to say:

'Who can know this *Dhamma* which is profound, un-namable, unthinkable? Only that *yogāvacara* who resolves upon cultivating the excellent Path, who has no doubt in the instructions and who has no ignorance.'

[VIMUTTIMAGGO NITTHITO.]

1. This and the following four questions are discussed in M.i.302 (Sutta No. 44).

APPENDIX A¹

[1. My article in the Annals of the Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute Vol. XV parts III—IV pp. 208-11 is reproduced here with some alterations and necessary corrections.]

1

The development of a child in the womb from week to week

as given in the Vimuttimagga (Chap. VIII, 4; p. 76,)

| | |
|------------------------|--|
| 1st week | Kalala |
| 2nd ,, | Abbuda |
| 3rd ,, | Pesi |
| 4th ,, | Ghana |
| 5th ,, | Five joints |
| 6th ,, | Four joints (possibly in addition although it is not so expressly said as in the following case) |
| 7th ,, | Four more joints |
| 8th ,, | 28 additional joints |
| 9th week and 10th week | Spine and bones |
| 11th week | 300 bones |
| 12th ,, | 800 joints |
| 13th ,, | 900 sinews |
| 14th ,, | 100 flesh-balls |
| 15th ,, | blood |
| 16th ,, | pleura, (<i>kilomaka</i>) |
| 17th ,, | Skin |
| 18th ,, | Colour of the skin |
| 19th ,, | <i>Kammaja vāta</i> all over the body |
| 24th ,, | <i>Navadvārāni</i> |
| 25th ,, | 17000 pores (?) |
| 26th ,, | Solid body |
| 27th ,, | Strength |
| 28th ,, | 99000 pores of the hair on the body |
| 29th ,, | All the limbs of the body |

Also it is said that in the seventh week the child remains by the back of the mother with the head down. In the 42nd week, the child is moved from its position by the windy element born of karma and comes to the *yonidvāra* with its head below. And then there is birth.

2

**List of worms in a human body as given in the Vimuttimagga
(Chinese version Chap. VIII. 4; p. 76.)**

The Vimuttimagga refers to 80,000 families of worms in all. It also gives the names of some worms as follows:—

| Location | Name | |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|--|
| Hair of the head | Fā-thien (hair-iron) | |
| Skull | Er-tsung (ear-kind) | |
| Brain (matthalunga) | Tie-Quān-hsien (maddener) | |
| subdivided into four categories. | | |
| (i) Yu-cu-ling-po | (ii) Sa-po-lo | |
| (iii) Tho-lo-ā | (iv) Tho-ā-sa-lo | |
| Eye | Thie-yen (licker of the eye) | |
| Ear | Thie-er (,, ,,, ear) | |
| Nose | Thie-pi (,, ,,, nose) | |
| subdivided into three kinds: | | |
| (i) Lau-kheu-mo-ā(hā) | (ii) Ā-leu-kheu | |
| (iii) Mo-nā-la-mu-kho (Mrñālmukha?) | | |
| Tongue | Fu-kie (or Fu-cie) | |
| Root of the tongue | Mu-tān-to | |
| Teeth | Kyu-pa | |
| Root of the teeth | Yu-po-kyu-po | |
| Throat | Ā-po-lo-ā (°hā) | |
| Neck | subdivided into two kinds: | |
| (i) Lo-ā-lo | (ii) phi-lo-ā-lo | |
| Hair of the body (loma) | Thie-māo (licker of hair of the body) | |
| Nails | Thic-tsā-o (licker of nails) | |
| Skin | subdivided into two kinds | |
| (i) Tu-nā | (ii) Tu-nān-to | |
| Pleura (Kilomakam) | subdivided into two kinds: | |
| (i) Phi-lān-po | (ii) Mo-o-phi-lān-po (Mahā°) | |
| Flesh | Two kinds: | |
| (i) Ā-lo-po | (ii) Lo-sā-po | |
| Blood | Two kinds: | |
| (i) Po-lo | (ii) Po-to.lo | |
| Sinews (nhāru) | Four kinds: | |
| (i) Lāy-to-lo | (ii) Si-to-sā | |
| (iii) Po-lo-po-to-lo | (iv) Lo-nā-po-lo-nā | |
| Pulse | Kā-li-sā-nā | |
| Root of the pulse | Two kinds: | |
| (i) Sa-po-lo | (ii) Yu-po-sa-po-lo | |

| Location | Name | |
|--|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Bones | Four kinds: | |
| | (i) Ā-thi-phi-phu | (iii) Ā-nān-phi-phu |
| | (iii) Tāy-liu-tho-phi-tho | (iv) Āy-thi-ye-kho-lo |
| Marrow of the bones (āṭṭhimiñjā) | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) Mī-se | (ii) Mī-se-sa-lo |
| Spleen (pihaka) | Two kinds: | |
| | ↙ (i) Nī-lo | (ii) Pi-to |
| Heart | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) Sa-pi--to | (ii) Yu-phi-to-sa-phi-to |
| Root of the heart | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) Mān-kho | (ii) Sa-lo |
| Liquid fact (vāsā) | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) Ko-lo | (ii) Ko-lo-sa--lo |
| Bladder | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) Mī-ko-lo | (ii) Mo-hā-ko-lo, Mahā°) |
| Root of the bladder | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) Ko-lo | (ii) Ko-lo-sa-lo |
| Cells of the membrane | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) Sā-po-lo | (ii) Mo-hā-sā-po-lo (Mahā°) |
| Roots of the cells of the membrane | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) Lāy-to | (ii) Mo-ho-lāy-to (Mahā°) |
| Mesentry (Antaguṇa) | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) Cau-lāy-to | (ii) Mo-ho-lāy-to (Mahā) |
| Roots of the intestines | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) Po | (ii) Mo-ho-sa-po |
| Root of the large intestine | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) Ā-nān-po-ā(°hā) | (ii) po-ko-po-ā |
| Stomach or rather its contents (udariya) | Four kinds: | |
| | (i) Yu-sau-ko | (ii) Yu-se-po |
| | (iii) Tsa-se-po | (iv) Sie-sa-po |
| Abdomen | Four kinds: | |
| | (i) Po-ā-nā | (ii) Mo-ho-po-ā-nā |
| | (iii) Tho-nā-phān | (iv) Phang-nā-mu-kho |
| Bile | Pi-to-li-hān | |
| Saliva (khela) | Sie-ān | |
| Sweat | Ra-sui-to-li-hā (ā) | |
| Fat (Medo) | Mi-tho-li-ā (hā) | |
| Strength | Two kinds: | |
| | (i) So-po-ā-mo | (ii) Se-mo-chi-to |

| Location | Name |
|---------------------------------|------------------------|
| Root of the strength | Three kinds: |
| (i) Chieu-ā-mu-kho | (ii) A-lo-ā-mu-kho |
| (iii) Pho-nā-mu-kho | |
| The food in front of the body | Five kinds of worms in |
| „ „ „ the back side of the body | |
| „ „ „ left „ „ „ | |
| „ „ „ right „ „ „ | |
| | and worms named |
| Cān-tho-sa-lo | Chang-ā-so-lo |
| | Pu-to-lo |
| | and so on. |
| Lower two openings | Three kinds: |
| (i) Kieu-lau-kieu-lo-wei-yu | (i) Chā-lo-yu |
| (iii) Hān-thiu-po-tho | |

3

I propose to indicate here some of the parallel passages found in the Vimuttimagga and Peṭakopadesa.¹

(1) In the very Introductory chapter² of the Vimuttimagga, Upatissa gives his reasons as to why he should tell the people the Path of Deliverance. There are, he says, some people who profit by listening to others and he gives a quotation (see M., i, 294) in which the Blessed One declares that there are two ways in which one can have the right view (*sammāditthi*)—either by learning it from others or by self-reflection. This corresponds to 'Dve hetū dve paccayā sāvakassa sammāditthiyā uppādāya, parato ca ghoso saccānusandhi, ajjhattañ ca yoniso manasikāro' found at the very beginning of the Peṭakopadesa.

(2) In the third chapter of (III.74) of the Visuddhimagga, Buddhaghosa refers to the view of the fourteen cariyās which he is not prepared to accept. Upatissa does refer to these fourteen³ and names them one after another. Among these there are two types which are called by the name of *samabhāgacariyā*. Now exactly this very type is found in Peṭakopadesa, VIIth Chapter, pp. 157, 162 (pp. 190, 192 of the printed edition).

(3) In the Twelfth book of the Vimuttimagga, in the twelfth chapter (Saccapariccheda), part two,⁴ we have only *three* lokuttara-indriyas given as playing an important part of the progress of the Yogāvacara towards the ideal of Arhatship.⁵ These same three indriyas, *aññātaññassāmītindriyam*, *aññindriyam*, and *ññātāvindriyam* are also found in the second and the third chapters of the Peṭakopadesa, pp. 56, 71-72 (pp. 146, 152 of the printed edition).

(4) So also in the same chapter we come across three⁵ kinds of searches, *tisso esanā* or *pariyesanā*. The same three we meet with in the eighth chapter of the Peṭakopadesa, p. 284 (p. 251 of the printed edition). Also see Vibhanga, p. 366.

(5) In the second part of the XIIth chapter⁶ we have three-fold classification of things; *khandha-sangaha*, *āyatana-sangaha*, *dhātusangaha*. Exactly the same classification we meet with in the sixth chapter of the Peṭakopadesa, p. 124 (p. 176 of the printed edition).

(6) In Book four, Chapter eight, part one,⁷ of the Vimutti-

1. My article on this subject in Indian Culture vol. III, no. 4, pp. 744-46, is reproduced here with a few alterations.

2. p. 2.

3. p. 34.

4. p. 122.

5. p. 122.

6. p. 112.

7. p. 48.

magga, Upatissa mentions three kinds of *middha*, *āhāraja*, *utuja* and *cittaja*, of which only the last he considers as *nīvaraṇa*, while the other two are possible even in an Arhat. Upatissa speaks of it in the twelfth chapter¹ also. There he says that among things given up by one at the time of the Arhatship, there are *thīna* and *uddhacca* and not *thīna-middha* and *uddhacca* as is asserted by Buddhaghosa in the XXII Chapter 71 para of the Visuddhimagga. This view of Upatissa is supported in the Peṭakopadesa, VIIth Chapter, p. 180 (p. 201 of the printed edition), where it is said 'Atthi pana Arahato kāyakilesamiddhañ ca okkamati, na ca tam nīvaraṇañ; tassa thīnamiddhañ nīvaraṇañ ti na ekampena'. This view is also supported by the author of the Milindapañha (see p. 253 of Trenckner's edition) who mentions *middha* among ten things over which an Arhat has no control.

(7) Upatissa quotes from what he calls Sān Tsān three passages of which I have been so far able to identify two passages only in the Peṭakopadesa, VIIth Chapter, pp. 157, 158 (p. 191 of the printed edition). One of these passages (p. 46) corresponds to 'Tattha alobhassa pāripūriyā vivitto hoti kāmehi, tattha adosassa pāripūriyā, amohassa pāripūriyā ca vivitto hoti pāpakehi akusalehi dhammehi'.

(8) The other passage² contains a simile which illustrates the distinction between *vitakka* and *vicāra*. The simile in the Vimuttimagga corresponds to the following passage from the Peṭakopadesa 'Tattha pathamābhlinipāto vitakko, paṭiladdhassa vicaraṇañ vicāro. Yathā puriso dūrato purisañ passati āgacchantam, na ca tāva jānāti itthī ti vā puriso ti vā, yadā tu paṭilabhati itthī ti vā puriso ti va evam-vanño ti vā—evam vicāro vitakke appeti.'

(9) There are other similes also from the Vimuttimagga which can be traced to the Peṭakopadesa, VIIth Chapter, p. 158 (p. 191 of the printed edition). Here is one.³ 'Yathā baliko huṇhiko⁴ sajjhāyañ karoti evam vitakko, yathā tam yeva anupassati evam vicāro.....'Niruttipaṭisambhidāyañ ca paṭibhānapaṭisambhidāyañ ca vitakko, dhammapaṭisambhidāyañ ca atthapatisambhidāyañ ca vicāro.'

(10) While describing the simultaneous nature of the penetration into Truths (*saccapariccheda*) Upatissa gives three similes,⁵ that of a boat crossing the floods, that of a lamp that is

1. p. 123.

2. p. 47.

3. p. 47.

4. The printed edition reads 'tuṇhiko'.

5. p. 119.

burning and that of the sun that is shining. Peṭakopadesa gives almost identical similes (p. 150; 187 of the printed edition). Buddhaghosa refers one of these similes to Porāṇas and although he does not mention that name with regard to others, it is very clear that the other similes also he borrows from the same source.

(11) There is one other important simile which I have been able to trace to the Peṭakopadesa, p. 190 (p. 206 of the printed edition). Upatissa gives a quotation¹ from one Nārada which purports to say 'Just as in a mountain-forest there may be a well but no rope with which water could be taken out. If at that time there comes a man overcome by the heat of the sun and fatigued by thirst, who sees the well and knows that there is water in it, but still cannot actually reach it, then merely by his knowledge about the existence of water in the well and merely by seeing it, he cannot satisfy his thirst; so in the same way, if I know *nirodha* as *nibbāna* and even if I have a perfect *yathābhūtaññadassana*, I do not thereby become a *khīṇasava arahā*.' The passage in the Peṭakopadesa says '*Yathā gambhīre udapāne udakam cakkhunā passati na ca kāyena abhisambhūnāti, evamassa ariyā nijjhānakhantiyā ditṭhi bhavati na ca sacchikatā*'.

(12) Besides the passages given above there are some minor passages where we find some of the jhānas explained as having particular angas. For instance, the third trance² is explained as having five angas in the Vimuttimagga. These same angas are mentioned in the Peṭakopadesa, p. 155 (p. 190 of the printed edition). '*Tathā pañcanga-samannāgataṁ tatiyam jhānam—satiyā, sampajaññena, sukhenā, cittekaggatāya, upekkhāya*'.

Do the instances given above justify us in concluding that the Author of the Vimuttimagga had the advantage of consulting the Peṭakopadesa³?

1. p. 126.

2. p. 52.

3. For other references. see pp. 86, 120, 122.

APPENDIX B

For facilitating reference to the P.T.S. edition of the Visuddhimagga, the following table is given. It shows the number of pages of the Visuddhimagga published by the Pali Text Society, corresponding to the chapters and paragraphs of the same text to be published in the Harvard Oriental Series.

The Roman figure shows the number of the chapter.

| P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs |
|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|
| | | 38 | 103-106 | 74 | 56-59 | 110 | 102-105 |
| I | | | | | | | |
| 1 | 1-2 | 39 | 106-109 | 75 | 59-61 | 111 | 105-110 |
| 2 | 2-6 | 40 | 109-114 | 76 | 61-65 | 112 | 110-114 |
| 3 | 6-7 | 41 | 114-118 | 77 | 65-68 | 113 | 114-118 |
| 4 | 7-10 | 42 | 118-121 | 78 | 69-73 | 114 | 119-122 |
| 5 | 10-13 | 43 | 122-126 | 79 | 74-78 | 115 | 122-126 |
| 6 | 13-17 | 44 | 126-129 | 80 | 78-82 | 116 | 126-129 |
| 7 | 17-18 | 45 | 129-130 | 81 | 82-86 | 117 | 129-133 |
| 8 | 19-22 | 46 | 130-132 | 82 | 87-91 | | |
| 9 | 22-23 | 47 | 132-135 | 83 | 91-93 | | |
| | | | | | | IV | |
| 10 | 24-25 | 48 | 135-137 | | | 118 | 1-2 |
| 11 | 25-27 | 49 | 137-140 | | | 119 | 2-7 |
| 12 | 27-31 | 50 | 140-141 | 84 | 1-3 | 120 | 7-13 |
| 13 | 31-34 | 51 | 141-144 | 85 | 3-8 | 121 | 13-18 |
| 14 | 34-39 | 52 | 144-149 | 86 | 8-15 | 122 | 18-21 |
| 15 | 39-42 | 53 | 149-153 | 87 | 15-20 | 123 | 21-24 |
| 16 | 42-43 | 54 | 153-155 | 88 | 20-24 | 124 | 24-27 |
| 17 | 44-45 | 55 | 155-157 | 89 | 24-29 | 125 | 27-31 |
| 18 | 45-47 | 56 | 157-158 | 90 | 29-33 | 126 | 31-34 |
| 19 | 47-51 | 57 | 158-159 | 91 | 33-37 | 127 | 35-39 |
| 20 | 52-55 | 58 | 159-161 | 92 | 37-41 | 128 | 40-43 |
| 21 | 55-57 | | | 93 | 41-44 | 129 | 43-47 |
| 22 | 58-60 | | II | 94 | 44-49 | 130 | 47-51 |
| 23 | 60-66 | 59 | 1-3 | 95 | 49-51 | 131 | 51-52 |
| 24 | 66-68 | 60 | 4-8 | 96 | 51-54 | 132 | 53-56 |
| 25 | 68-69 | 61 | 8-12 | 97 | 54-58 | 133 | 56-58 |
| 26 | 69-72 | 62 | 12-16 | 98 | 58-63 | 134 | 58-62 |
| 27 | 72-76 | 63 | 16-19 | 99 | 63-67 | 135 | 62-66 |
| 28 | 76-78 | 64 | 19-23 | 100 | 67-71 | 136 | 66-70 |
| 29 | 78-82 | 65 | 23-25 | 101 | 71-74 | 137 | 70-74 |
| 30 | 82-86 | 66 | 26-28 | 102 | 74-80 | 138 | 74-78 |
| 31 | 86-89 | 67 | 28-31 | 103 | 80-84 | 139 | 78-82 |
| 32 | 89-93 | 68 | 31-34 | 104 | 85-88 | 140 | 82-85 |
| 33 | 93-94 | 69 | 35-38 | 105 | 88-92 | 141 | 85-88 |
| 34 | 94-96 | 70 | 39-42 | 106 | 92-95 | 142 | 88-91 |
| 35 | 96-98 | 71 | 43-48 | 107 | 95-97 | 143 | 91-96 |
| 36 | 98-100 | 72 | 48-52 | 108 | 97-99 | 144 | 96-99 |
| 37 | 100-103 | 73 | 52-55 | 109 | 99-102 | 145 | 100-103 |

APPENDIX B

137

| P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs |
|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|
| 146 | 103-107 | 191 | 73-78 | 237 | 34-36 | 288 | 227-230 |
| 147 | 107-111 | 192 | 78-80 | 238 | 37-40 | 289 | 230-233 |
| 148 | 112-115 | 193 | 80-85 | 239 | 40-42 | 290 | 233-236 |
| 149 | 115-119 | 194 | 85-88 | 240 | 42-45 | 291 | 236-241 |
| 150 | 119-122 | 195 | 88-91 | 241 | 45-49 | 292 | 241-244 |
| 151 | 122-124 | 196 | 91-94 | 242 | 49-55 | 293 | 244-247 |
| 152 | 124-127 | | | 243 | 56-62 | 294 | 247-251 |
| 153 | 127-130 | | VII | 244 | 62-66 | | |
| 154 | 130-135 | 197 | | 1 | 245 | 66-69 | |
| 155 | 135-139 | 198 | | 2-9 | 246 | 69-74 | IX 1-3 |
| 156 | 140-144 | 199 | | 9-18 | 247 | 74-76 | 3-9 |
| 157 | 144-147 | 200 | | 18-22 | 248 | 76-81 | 9-13 |
| 158 | 147-152 | 201 | | 22-26 | 249 | 81-86 | 13-15 |
| 159 | 152-155 | 202 | | 27-31 | 250 | 86-91 | 15-19 |
| 160 | 155-161 | 203 | | 31-35 | 251 | 91-94 | 19-22 |
| 161 | 161-168 | 204 | | 35-37 | 252 | 94-98 | 22-24 |
| 162 | 168-173 | 205 | | 37-41 | 253 | 98-101 | 24-29 |
| 163 | 173-177 | 206 | | 41-43 | 254 | 101-105 | 29-32 |
| 164 | 177-181 | 207 | | 44-47 | 255 | 105-109 | 32-34 |
| 165 | 181-186 | 208 | | 47-51 | 256 | 109-113 | 35-37 |
| 166 | 186-190 | 209 | | 51-54 | 257 | 113-117 | 37-39 |
| 167 | 190-194 | 210 | | 54-59 | 258 | 117-121 | 40-43 |
| 168 | 194-198 | 211 | | 59-62 | 259 | 121-124 | 43-47 |
| 169 | 198-202 | 212 | | 62-67 | 260 | 124-127 | 47-52 |
| | | 213 | | 67-70 | 261 | 128-130 | 52-55 |
| V | | 214 | | 70-73 | 262 | 130-133 | 55-61 |
| 170 | 1-4 | 215 | | 73-76 | 263 | 133-135 | 62-67 |
| 171 | 4-8 | 216 | | 77-82 | 264 | 135-138 | 68-73 |
| 172 | 8-12 | 217 | | 82-87 | 265 | 138-142 | 74-79 |
| 173 | 12-17 | 218 | | 88-90 | 266 | 142-145 | 79-83 |
| 174 | 17-22 | 219 | | 90-95 | 268 | 148-153 | 84-87 |
| 175 | 22-30 | 220 | | 95-99 | 269 | 153-156 | 88-92 |
| 176 | 30-39 | 221 | | 99-102 | 270 | 156-158 | 92-98 |
| 177 | 39-42 | 222 | | 102-106 | 271 | 159-164 | 98-101 |
| | | 223 | | 107-111 | 272 | 164-168 | 101-106 |
| VI | | 224 | | 111-114 | 273 | 168-172 | 107-110 |
| | | 225 | | 115-117 | 274 | 172-177 | 110-114 |
| 178 | 1-4 | 226 | | 118-123 | 275 | 177-180 | 114-118 |
| 179 | 5-13 | 227 | | 123-127 | 276 | 181-184 | 118-122 |
| 180 | 13-19 | 228 | | 127-128 | 277 | 184-187 | 122-124 |
| 181 | 19-23 | | | | 278 | 187-191 | |
| 182 | 23-27 | | VIII | | 279 | 191-195 | X |
| 183 | 28-35 | 229 | | 1-3 | 280 | 195-199 | 1-4 |
| 184 | 35-43 | 230 | | 3-10 | 281 | 199-202 | 4-9 |
| 185 | 43-50 | 231 | | 10-13 | 282 | 202-205 | 9-13 |
| 186 | 50-56 | 232 | | 13-16 | 283 | 205-210 | 14-17 |
| 187 | 56-60 | 233 | | 16-21 | 284 | 210-213 | 17-21 |
| 188 | 60-64 | 234 | | 21-24 | 285 | 213-217 | 21-25 |
| 189 | 64-67 | 235 | | 25-28 | 286 | 218-223 | 25-31 |
| 190 | 67-72 | 236 | | 28-33 | 287 | 223-227 | 31-35 |

| P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs |
|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|
| 334 | 35-39 | 380 | 29-33 | 428 | 95-99 | 476 | 206-211 |
| 335 | 39-43 | 381 | 33-36 | 429 | 99-106 | 477 | 211-214 |
| 336 | 43-47 | 382 | 36-40 | 430 | 106-109 | 478 | 214-220 |
| 337 | 47-52 | 383 | 40-44 | 431 | 109-113 | 479 | 220-226 |
| 338 | 52-58 | 384 | 44-49 | 432 | 113-119 | 480 | 226-230 |
| 339 | 58-62 | 385 | 49-54 | 433 | 119-123 | | |
| 340 | 62-66 | 386 | 54-57 | 434 | 123-128 | | |
| | | 387 | 57-60 | 435 | 128-129 | 481 | ,1-4 |
| | | XI | 60-63 | | | 482 | 4-9 |
| 341 | 1-5 | 389 | 63-68 | | | XIV | 9-14 |
| 342 | 5-9 | 390 | 68-72 | 436 | 1-3 | 484 | 14-19 |
| 343 | 9-13 | 391 | 72-77 | 437 | 3-6 | 485 | 19-25 |
| 344 | 14-18 | 392 | 77-81 | 438 | 6-11 | 486 | 25-27 |
| 345 | 18-22 | 393 | 81-85 | 439 | 11-16 | 487 | 28-34 |
| 346 | 22-25 | 394 | 85-90 | 440 | 16-22 | 488 | 34-39 |
| 347 | 25-28 | 395 | 90-94 | 441 | 22-25 | 489 | 39-42 |
| 348 | 28-31 | 396 | 94-98 | 442 | 25-30 | 490 | 43 |
| 349 | 31-34 | 397 | 98-102 | 443 | 31-35 | | |
| 350 | 35-37 | 398 | 102-107 | 444 | 35-43 | | |
| 351 | 37-41 | 399 | 107-111 | 445 | 43-47 | 491 | 1-5 |
| 352 | 41-46 | 400 | 111-115 | 446 | 47-55 | 492 | 5-8 |
| 353 | 46-50 | 401 | 115-119 | 447 | 56-61 | 493 | 9-12 |
| 354 | 50-54 | 402 | 119-121 | 448 | 61-65 | 494 | 13-16 |
| 355 | 54-56 | 403 | 121-127 | 449 | 65-68 | 495 | 17-23 |
| 356 | 56-60 | 404 | 127-132 | 450 | 69-73 | 496 | 23-26 |
| 357 | 60-63 | 405 | 133-137 | 451 | 73-79 | 497 | 26-29 |
| 358 | 63-67 | 406 | 137-139 | 452 | 79-83 | 498 | 30-32 |
| 359 | 67-70 | | | 453 | 83-88 | 499 | 32-36 |
| 360 | 70-73 | | XIII | 454 | 89-95 | 500 | 36-41 |
| 361 | 73-76 | 407 | 1-4 | 455 | 96-100 | 501 | 42-43 |
| 362 | 76-80 | 408 | 4-7 | 456 | 100-108 | 502 | 44-47 |
| 363 | 80-84 | 409 | 7-11 | 457 | 108-113 | 503 | 47-50 |
| 364 | 84-88 | 410 | 11-13 | 458 | 113-118 | 504 | 51-54 |
| 365 | 88-93 | 411 | 13-18 | 459 | 118-122 | 505 | 55-59 |
| 366 | 94-98 | 412 | 18-24 | 460 | 122-126 | 506 | 59-62 |
| 367 | 98-102 | 413 | 24-27 | 461 | 127-129 | 507 | 62-68 |
| 368 | 102-109 | 414 | 27-32 | 462 | 129-133 | 508 | 68-71 |
| 369 | 109-112 | 415 | 32-35 | 463 | 133-135 | 509 | 72-78 |
| 370 | 112-117 | 416 | 35-41 | 464 | 136-142 | 510 | 78-84 |
| 371 | 118-122 | 417 | 41-45 | 465 | 142-147 | 511 | 85-86 |
| 372 | 123-126 | 418 | 45-51 | 466 | 147-153 | 512 | 86-90 |
| | | 419 | 52-55 | 467 | 153-158 | 513 | 90-91 |
| | | XII | 55-60 | 468 | 158-164 | 514 | 92-97 |
| 373 | 1-2 | 421 | 60-65 | 469 | 164-170 | 515 | 97-102 |
| 374 | 2-6 | 422 | 65-70 | 470 | 170-176 | 516 | 103-104 |
| 375 | 6-9 | 423 | 70-74 | 471 | 176-181 | | |
| 376 | 9-14 | 424 | 74-79 | 472 | 181-188 | 517 | 1-3 |
| 377 | 14-19 | 425 | 79-85 | 473 | 188-196 | 518 | 4-8 |
| 378 | 19-24 | 426 | 85-90 | 474 | 196-201 | 519 | 8-12 |
| 379 | 25-29 | 427 | 90-95 | 475 | 202-206 | 520 | 12-16 |

| P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs | P.T.S. Pages | H.O.S. Para- graphs |
|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|
| 521 | 16-22 | 571 | 248-253 | 618 | 44-47 | 667 | 112-117 |
| 522 | 22-25 | 572 | 253-258 | 619 | 48-51 | 668 | 117-124 |
| 523 | 25-31 | 573 | 258-262 | 620 | 51-56 | 669 | 125-129 |
| 524 | 31-35 | 574 | 262-266 | 621 | 56-63 | 670 | 129-133 |
| 525 | 35-41 | 575 | 266-271 | 622 | 63-66 | 671 | 134-136 |
| 526 | 41-45 | 576 | 271-277 | 623 | 67-69 | | |
| 527 | 45-49 | 577 | 277-281 | 624 | 69-72 | | |
| 528 | 49-52 | 578 | 282-287 | 625 | 72-75 | 672 | 1-5 |
| 529 | 52-58 | 579 | 288-293 | 626 | 75-80 | 673 | 5-8 |
| 530 | 58-61 | 580 | 293-296 | 627 | 80-83 | 674 | 8-13 |
| 531 | 61-64 | 581 | 297-301 | 628 | 83-90 | 675 | 13-17 |
| 532 | 64-68 | 582 | 301-303 | 629 | 90-93 | 676 | 18-23 |
| 533 | 68-71 | 583 | 303-305 | 630 | 93-97 | 677 | 23-28 |
| 534 | 72-76 | 584 | 305-309 | 631 | 97-100 | 678 | 28-34 |
| 535 | 76-80 | 585 | 309-314 | 632 | 100-104 | 679 | 34-39 |
| 536 | 80-83 | 586 | 314 | 633 | 104-106 | 680 | 39-43 |
| 537 | 83-86 | | XVIII | 634 | 106-111 | 681 | 43-45 |
| 538 | 86-91 | 587 | 1-4 | 635 | 111-116 | 682 | 45-48 |
| 539 | 91-95 | 588 | 4-8 | 636 | 116-122 | 683 | 48-56 |
| 540 | 95-97 | 589 | 8-11 | 637 | 122-127 | 684 | 56-66 |
| 541 | 97-104 | 590 | 11-14 | 638 | 127-130 | 685 | 66-78 |
| 542 | 104-108 | 591 | 15-19 | | XXI | 686 | 78-79 |
| 543 | 108-112 | 592 | 19-23 | 639 | 1-2 | 687 | 79-83 |
| 544 | 112-119 | 593 | 23-28 | 640 | 3-10 | 688 | 84-88 |
| 545 | 120-123 | 594 | 28-31 | 641 | 10-12 | 689 | 88-92 |
| 546 | 123-128 | 595 | 31-33 | 642 | 12-18 | 690 | 92-96 |
| 547 | 128-132 | 596 | 33-36 | 643 | 18-23 | 691 | 96-99 |
| 548 | 132-136 | 597 | 36-37 | 644 | 24-28 | 692 | 99-106 |
| 549 | 136-140 | | XIX | 645 | 28-31 | 693 | 106-112 |
| 550 | 140-143 | 598 | 1-3 | 646 | 31-34 | 694 | 112-115 |
| 551 | 143-148 | 599 | 3-8 | 647 | 34-37 | 695 | 115-121 |
| 552 | 148-156 | 600 | 8-13 | 648 | 37-37 | 696 | 121-126 |
| 553 | 156-162 | 601 | 14-16 | 649 | 37-40 | 697 | 126-129 |
| 554 | 162-167 | 602 | 16-20 | 650 | 40-43 | | |
| 555 | 168-174 | 603 | 20-22 | 651 | 43-47 | 698 | 1-3 |
| 556 | 174-178 | 604 | 22-26 | 652 | 47-50 | 699 | 3-7 |
| 557 | 178-182 | 605 | 26-27 | 653 | 50-53 | 700 | 7-11 |
| 558 | 182-189 | | XX | 654 | 53-56 | 701 | 12-15 |
| 559 | 189-193 | 606 | 1-3 | 655 | 56-60 | 702 | 15-20 |
| 560 | 193-197 | 607 | 3-7 | 656 | 60-64 | 703 | 20-25 |
| 561 | 197-202 | 609 | 7-10 | 657 | 64-68 | 704 | 25-28 |
| 562 | 202-205 | 609 | 10-13 | 658 | 68-73 | 705 | 29-34 |
| 563 | 205-212 | 610 | 13-16 | 659 | 73-76 | 706 | 35-38 |
| 564 | 213-217 | 611 | 16-19 | 660 | 76-81 | 707 | 38-43 |
| 565 | 218-223 | 612 | 19-20 | 661 | 81-85 | 708 | 43-50 |
| 566 | 223-229 | 613 | 20-23 | 662 | 85-89 | 709 | 51-55 |
| 567 | 229-235 | 614 | 23-29 | 663 | 89-92 | 710 | 55-60 |
| 568 | 235-239 | 615 | 30-34 | 664 | 92-97 | 711 | |
| 569 | 240-243 | 616 | 34-40 | 665 | 98-104 | 712 | |
| 570 | 243-248 | 617 | 40-44 | 666 | 104-112 | 713 | |

Pages
612-614

INDEX OF PALI WORDS

a-kata, 43.
a-kataññuto, 77.
Ākaniṭṭha, 120.
a-kāraṇato, 73.
a-kālika, 67; °maraṇa, 72.
a-iriya
 °diṭṭhi, 110.
°dhamma, 115
akusala
 °kammapatha, 124.
 °cittuppāda (twelve), 124.
 °dhammā, 79.
 °mūlānt (three), 122.
 °sīla, 6, 10.
ankura (sim.), 104, 105.
a-gati (four), 123.
a-gārava-padaṭṭhāna, 99.
acci, 120n.
ajjhatta, 87.
 °bahiddhā, 87.
 °bahiddhā-ārammaṇa, 87.
aññāṇa-upekkhā, 65.
aññātāvindriya, 122.
aññindriya, 122.
aññe, 5.
Āṭṭhakathā, 58, 60, 95.
Āṭṭhaka-nipāta, 81.
aṭṭhāna, 32.
aṭṭhi-saññā, 62.
aṭṭhika, 38, 61.
Atappā, 120.
atītaṁsa, 65.
 °ñāṇa, 89.
atīta-kammakilesa, 106.
attha, 110.
 avitatha°, 110
 dhamma°, 110.
vacana°to, 83.
sacca°, 110.
suññatā°, 110.
 (two kinds): sāmañña, visesa, 83.
Atharva-veda, 76n.
a-dukkhamasukha, 53.
a-dosa, 28, 46, 80.
addhāna-paricchedato, 74.
adhicitta-sikkhā, 2, 70.
adhiṭṭhāna (°ā)
 (four), 80 n.
iddhi, 86.
 °pāramitā, 64, 80.
adhipaññā-sikkhā, 2, 70.
adhipateyya, 8.
adhimokkha, 99.
 (upakkilesa) 117.
adhisilasikkhā, 2, 70.
anaññātaññāssāmītindriya, 122.
anatta! (°ā) 84, 114, 119.
 °anupassanā, 114.
 °saññā, 75.
anavaya-ñāṇa, 6.
anāgataṁsa, 65.
 °ñāṇa, 91.
anāgata-phala-vipāka, 106.
Ānāgāmī, 3, 125-128.
 five kinds of, 120.
anācariyaka, 62.
anāsava, 1, 110.
anicca, 84, 114, 118.
 °anupassanā, 114.
 °anupassī, 71.
 °diṭṭhi, 121.
 °saññā, 74, 75.
a-nidassana
 °appaṭigha, 97.
 °sappaṭigha, 97.
anindriya, 42.

a-nimitta (ā), 118, 128.
 °ceto-samādhi, 126.
 °to, 74.
 °dhātu, 114.
 °vimokkha, 122.
 aniyata, 11n.
 anutāpa, 6n.
 anuttara, 1, 63.
 °vimutta, 3.
 anunaya, 49, 82.
 paṭigha°, 82.
 anupādinna, 97.
 °rūpa, 97.
 anupubba-samāpatti (nine), 66.
 anuppāda, 118.
 anubandhanā, 70.
 Anuruddha, 48.
 anuloma, 28n.
 °ñāṇa, 118-119, **119**.
 anusayā (satta), 111, **123**, 124n.
 anussati, 38, 62-78.
 upasama°, 41.
 Cha° niddesa, 63.
 dasa°, 38, 62-78.
 Buddha°, 41, 62-66.
 anottappa, 99, 123.
 anta, 49, kalyāṇa°, 2.
 antarāyakarā, 27.
 antarāyikā (dhammā)
 (samādhissa), 27.
 silassa (34), 6.
 antarāvāsaka, 17.
 anvaye ñāṇam, 93.
 apacaya, 92, 93.
 apariyāpanna, 29.
 °paññā, 93.
 apare, 95.
 apāya-kosalla, 92.
 a-puthujjana, 125.
 appaññā, 45, 46, 49, 53, 60, 66.
 nirodhe°, 125.

°samādhi, 28.
 appañihita (°ā), 128.
 °dhātu, 114.
 °vimokkha, 122.
 appamaññā, **38**, 39, 78-82.
 (four), **38**.
 appamāṇa-cittāni, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42.
 Appamāṇa-subhā, 53.
 Appamāṇabhā, 52.
 apparajakkha, 2.
 apphuṭam ñāṇena, 65.
 abbuda, 76,
 abbocchinna, 97.
 Abbhuta-dhamma, 94.
 abbhokāsika, 16, 21, 23, 24.
 abyākata, 91, 93n.
 °kiriyā, 92.
 °dhetanga, 24.
 °paññā, 92, 93.
 °sīla, 6.
 a-byāpāra-naya, 115.
 abhabbā samādhissa
 uppādanāya, 57.
 Abhaya-giri, 24.
 °vādino, 127n.
 °vāsika, 24, 24n.
 °vāsino, 49n, 95.
 abhiññā, 80, 86-91.
 (five), 27, **86**,
 (six), 65.
 lokiyā°, 91.
 lokuttarā°, 91.
 °sacchikiriyā, 27.
 Abhidhamma, 1, 4, 23, 26, 32, 33,
 62, 74, 125.
 abhibhāyatana, 60.
 (eight), 65-66.
 abhimāna, 111.
 amata
 °dvāra, 66.
 °dhātu, 64, 84, 126.

a-manussa, 43.
 a-middhatā, 28.
 a-moha, 46, 79.
 Ambaṭṭha, 63.
 a-yoniso
 °manasikāra, 105n, 112n,
 °manasikāra-mūlakā dhammā,
 112.
 ayuta, 63.
 arati, 81, 82.
 arahatta
 °upapatti, 10.
 °magga, 126.
 °sila, 8, 9.
 Arahā (araham) 3, 24, 48, 63, 126,
 127, 128.
 khīṇasava°, 126.
 aritta, 61.
 ariya
 °vāsā, 66.
 °sacca, 108, 109.
 °sacca-upāyā, 112.
 ariyā-iddhi, 86.
 arūpāvacara, 89.
 (sphere), 89.
 (samādhi), 54-56.
 aruṇa-vanṇa, 43.
 a-lobha, 46, 79.
 a-vikkhepa 28, 127.
 avijjā, 104-106, 111.
 a-vinibbhogato, 83.
 a-vippatīsāra, 5, 9.
 Aviśahya-Śreṣṭhi-jātaka, 64.
 Avihā, 120
 a-vihimsā-saññā, 97, 98.
 avītikkama-sīla, 4.
 a-samvara, 4-5
 a-sankhata, 105, 126, 128.
 °dhamma, 128.
 asankhiya, 63n.
 asankheyya, 63.
 Aṣaññī (devā), 30, 53.
 °samādhi, 30, 55.
 a-samprajanya, 6n.
 asubha, 38, 60-62.
 °to 76.
 (dasa) 38, 41.
 °saññā, 75.
 a-sekha-bhūmi, 122.
 assāsa-passāsa-upanibaddha, 74.
 Aṣṭāṅga-hṛdaya, 76n.
 a-himsā, 81.
 a-hirika, 99, 123.
 ākāra, 97.
 °rūpa, 97.
 °vikāra-rūpa, 97.
 ākāsa, 54, 54n.
 °ānañcāyatana, 54-55.
 ,, -upaga, 55.
 °āyatana, 38.
 °kasiṇa, 59, 87.
 'not without rūpa' 58, 59.
 paricchinna °kasiṇa, 38, 40, 59.
 °samāpatti, 54.
 'without rūpa,' 59.
 ākiñcaññāyatana, 38, 55-56, 85.
 °upaga (gods), 56.
 ācaya, 92, 93.
 ācariya, 23, 34, 36, 70n.
 °mata, 37.
 ācāra, 5, 10, 11, 15.
 ādāna, 4.
 ādikammika, 32, 88.
 ādi-kalyāṇa, 12, 49.
 ādīnava
 °anupassanā-ñāṇa, 118.
 °saññā, 75.
 Ānanda, 126.
 ānamanā, 71.
 ānāpāna
 °sati, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 69-72.
 ānisamṣa, 5, 17-22, 27, 69, 72, 75,
 77, 78, 79, 80, 84, 92.

āneñja
 °dhamma, 11.
 °vihāra, 57.
 °samādhi, 127.
 āpatti, 11n.
 āpo, 83.
 āpo-kasiña, 38, 57.
 Ābhassarā, 52.
 āmantanā, 18.
 āya-kosalla, 92.
 āyatana, 95, **100**, 113, 114.
 (twelve), 100-103.
 ajjhattika°, 114.
 bāhira°, 114.
 āyu
 °dubbalato, 74.
 °sankhāra, 72.
 āraññika, 16, 20, 23, 24.
 ārammaṇa, 31, 36, 40, 79, 80, 81,
 82, 88, 89, 91, 117.
 (nine) : paritta, mahaggata, etc.
 87.
 Nibbāna°, 117.
 paṭibhāga°, 40.
 bherava°, 39.
 sabhāvadhamma°, 40.
 ārammaṇato, 35, 40, 99, 115.
 āruppa, 39, 54n, 54-56.
 °kasiña (two), 39.
 āloka, 90, 101.
 °kasiña, 38, 58, 59, 88, 90.
 °pharaṇatā, 30.
 °saññā, 90.
 āvajjana-citta, 102.
 āvāsa, 32.
 āsana, 44.
 āsava, 48.
 (four), **123**.
 °khaya-balāni (ten), 66.
 °samudaya, 105.
 āhāra, 96.
 āhāre paṭikkūla-saññā, 38, 40n,
 41, 82, **84-85**.
 āhuṇeyya, 67.
 Ālāra Kālāma, 55.
 itthi-sarīram purisassa, 61.
 itthindriya-dasaka, 96.
 idamathitā, 25.
 idamṣaccābhinivesa, 123.
 iddhi, 86-87.
 adhiṭṭhānā°, 86, 87.
 ariyā°, 86.
 °kathā, 86.
 puññavato°, 86.
 manomayā°, 86, 87.
 vikubbanā°, 86, 87.
 iddhi-pāda, 65, 66, 88, 89, 90,
 chanda-samādhi-padhāna-san-
 khāra-samannāgata°, 87
 iddhimā, 87.
 iddhividha, 86.
 °ñāṇa, 87.
 Indra, 73n.
 indriya, 84, 121.
 (five), 65, 66, 111.
 (three), 122.
 °dhamma, 5.
 °sañvara, 12, 14.
 sukha°, dukkha°,
 domanassa°, somanassa°
 upekkhā°, 97.
 iriyāpatha, 36.
 issā, 6, 124.
 uggaha-nimitta, 45.
 ucchagga, 58.
 uccheda-ditthi, 110.
 uju-paṭipanna, 67.
 utu, 96.
 ṗṭtarāsanga, 17.
 udaka-rahada (sim.), 52.
 udapāna, 126n.
 udaya, 115, 116.

udayabbaya, 115.
 °nāṇa, 115-116.
 °lakkhaṇa, 116.
 Uddaka Rāmaputta, 55.
 Uddhamsota, 120.
 uddhacca-kukkucca, 27, 49, 123.
 uddhumātaka, 38, 60-61.
 °saññā-ānisāmsa, 60.
 upakkilesa, 7, 71, 117.
 (niñe), 70,
 (ten), 117.
 Upagupta, 62n.
 upacāra, 28n, 45, 53, 57, 66.
 °jhāna, 45, 85.
 °samādhi, 28, 67, 78:
 sa-sambhārika°, 49.
 upajjhāya, 23.
 upaṭṭhāna, 117.
 (upakkilesa), 117.
 Upatissa, 1, 2, 4, 5, 7, 23, 24, **35**
 (very important), 74, 83, 84,
 etc. (too numerous references).
 upadhi
 sabba° paṭinissagga, 66.
 upanissaya
 sa °tā, 27.
 upamāto, 110.
 upasampharaṇato, 73.
 upasama, **77**.
 °(adhiṭṭhāna), 80
 °anussati 38, 41, **77-78**.
 uppatti-dvārato, 97, 98,
 upādāna, 104,
 (four), **123**.
 °khandha, 100, 108, 114, 115.
 (180 ways of reflection upon),
 114.
 upādā-rūpa, 95, 96.
 (twenty-six), 95.
 upādinna-rūpa, 97.

upāya, 41, 45.
 °kosalla, 92.
 (pañca), **95-112**.
 upāyāsa-dukkha, 108.
 upekkhaka, 52.
 upekkhā, 52, 53, 53n, 80, 81.
 (of eight or ten kinds), 52.
 (threefold,) 52.
 °anubrūhanā, 49.
 °indriya, 88.
 °(upakkilesa), 117.
 °pāramitā, 64, 80.
 °bhūmi, 81.
 uppalinī (sim.), 52.
 ummilana, 44.
 ūkā, 96.
 °sira, 96.
 eka-bhojana, 19.
 ekaggatā, 48, 49, 49n, 51n, 52n,
 53n.
 ekacce, 35, 70.
 ekatta-naya, 115.
 ekattato, 97, 110.
 nānatta°, 84.
 ekabijī, 120.
 tikkhindriya°, 120.
 eka-lakkhaṇa-dhamma, 115.
 ekāsanika, 19, 23.
 eke, 49n.
 ekodi-bhāva, 31, 51.
 etarahi, 74.
 evam-dhammatā-naya, 115.
 ehi-passa, 67.
 ehi-passika, 67.
 elamūga, 123n.
 oghā (four), 123.
 ottappa, 33.
 odāta-kasiṇa, 58, 59.
 odātena vatthena pārupita (sim.),
 53.
 odāta-vasana-sīla, 10.

odhiso °mitta, 32.
 °pharaṇā, 80. °mitta-pariyesanā, 32-33.
 an°pharaṇā, 80, kasiṇa, 38, 38-53, 45, 57-59, 58, 87.
 opapātika, 89. (artificial), 58.
 °rūpa, 107. dasa°, 38.
 obhāsa, 117. °maṇḍala, 43, 44, 45, 58.
 orima-tira (sim.), 110. vaṇṇa°, 41, 59.
 olārika kāma, 44.
 °atthena, 110. kilesa°, 46.
 °kāmarāga-paṭīgha, 77. °chanda, 27, 49.
 °rūpa, 114. vatthu°, 46.
 kankhā-vitaraṇa-visuddhi, 113-115. kāya, 100.
 kakaca (sim.), 70, 78. °gatā sati, 38, 40, 41, 75-77, 111.
 kanṭaka, 56. °viññāṇa, 101.
 kaṇha-sukka, 97, 98; °to, 97. °sankhāra, 70, 128.
 kata, 43. sa-viññāṇaka°, 111.
 Kathāvatthu, 120, 121. kāya-bahu-sādhāraṇato, 74.
 kappa, 50, 52, 53, 55, 56, 63n. kāyā
 kamato, 110. phassa°, vedanā°, saññā°, ceta-
 kamma, 32, 96, 105. nā°, taṇhā°, 114.
 °kilesa, 106. kālika-maraṇa, 73.
 °dvāra, 43, 51, 59, 69. kilesa, 90, 105, 121, 122.
 °nimitta, 106. °kāma, 46.
 °vipākaja, 97n. °to, 36.
 °vipākaphala-ñāṇa, 97. mūla°, 35.
 °sakatā, 79. °vatthūni (ten), 123.
 °sakatā-ñāṇa, 91, 93. (attached to), 115.
 °samuṭṭhāna, 96. (end of), 120, 124.
 °sahajā°hetu, 107. (one hundred and thirty-four),
 kammaṭṭhāna, 31, 34, 41, 43, 61, 122-124.
 82, 115. kiki (sim.), 15n.
 (thirty-eight), 38-39, 115. kiccato, 36, 83.
 °pariccheda, 38-42. kimi-kula, 76, Appendix A 1.
 karuṇā, 38, 80, 81. kiriyā
 kalala, 76. °jhāna, 30n.
 kalāpato, 76, 83, 96, 116. °samādhi, 29, 30.
 kalyāṇa kukkura-sīla, 9.
 ādi°, 2. kumāra, dahara (sim.), 45.
 tividha° 47, 49, 51-53, 55, 56 kula, 32.
 pariyoṣāna°, 2. kusa, 75.
 majjhe°, 2. kusala-dhammā, 66, 79.

kuhanā, 12.
 kevala, 106.
 kolamkola, 120.
 majjhimindriya°, 120.
 kosalla
 āya°, apāya°, upāya°, 92.
 khaṇato, 74.
 khaṇikamarāṇa, 72.
 kūanti, 78, 93.
 °pāṇamitā, 64, 80.
 khandhā, (five), 95-100, 113, 118, 120.
 rūpa, vedanā, saññā, sankhāra,
 viññāṇa, 95.
 upādāna°, 100, 114, 115.
 dhamma°, 100.
 khalu-pacchābhāttika, 16, 20, 23.
 khippā-paṭipadā, 35.
 khela, 96.
 gaṇa, 32.
 gaṇanā, 70.
 gaṇanāto, 110.
 gaṇḍa, saññā°, 56.
 Gaṇṭhi, Visuddhimagga°, 65n.
 gati, 106.
 (five), 111, 115, 118.
 gati-nimitta, 106.
 gantha, 32.
 gandhabba (sim.), 71, 72.
 °nagara (sim.), 116.
 gamanato, 36, 84.
 gambhīra
 °kathā, 32.
 °sabhāva, 105.
 gahaṇa
 °to, 41.
 nimitta°, 57, 115.
 garu, 32.
 gāvī, pabbateyyā° (sim.) 51.
 guṇā, pañcavisati°, 49.

guṇābhīyuttam
 tevisati°, 51, 52.
 dvāvīsati°, 52.
 pañcavīsati°, 48.
 bāvīsati°, 53, 55, 56.
 gutta-dvāratā
 indriyesu°, 28.
 go-sīla, 9.
 go-cara, 10, 11, 36.
 Gotama, 1
 gotrabhū, 28, 28n, 57, 119, 125, 126.
 °ñāṇa, 119.
 ghana, 76.
 ghāṇṭā,
 °anurava (sim.), 46.
 °abhīghāta (sim.), 46.
 ghora, 118,
 għosa, 2.
 cakkato, 106.
 cakkhu, 96, 101,
 °āyatana, 96, 100.
 °dasaka, 96.
 °pasāda, 96.
 °viññāṇa, 99, 101, 102.
 catu-sankhepato, 106.
 candāla, 15, 23, 99.
 catudhātu-vavatīhāna, 38, 40, 40n, 41, 42, 82-84, 95.
 candana, 75.
 camari, 15.
 Caraka, 76n.
 caraṇa, 63.
 vijjā°, 63.
 cariyā, 34, 35, 38.
 (fourteen), 34.
 °pariccheda, 34-37.
 Cariyā-piṭaka, 64.
 cāga
 °(adhiṭṭhāna) 80.
 °anussatī, 38, 67.

cātuddisatā, 18.
 cāritta (sila), 7.
 citta, 84, 96, 98, 102.
 °ekaggatā, 109.
 °paṭisamvedi, 71.
 para °vijānanā, 86.
 °sankhāra, 71.
 °samuṭṭhāna, 96.
 (in the viṭhi), 102.
 cintāmayā-paññā, 92.
 cīvara
 °pāpuraṇato, 36.
 °samādāna, 36.
 cuṇṇato, 83.
 cetanā-kāyā, 114.
 cetanā-sila, 4.
 cetiya
 °ghara, 63.
 °rukka, 21.
 ceto
 °pariya-ñāṇa, 89.
 °pharaṇatā, 30.
 Chaddanta-jātaka, 64.
 chanda, 123.
 kāma°, 27, 49.
 °samādhi-padhāna-
 sankhāra-samannāgata, 87.
 chava-ḍāhaka, 72.
 jambu-pakka-sadisa, 89.
 jarā, **104, 108.**
 °maraṇa, 105.
 javana-citta, 102.
 jāgariyānuyoga, 28.
 Jātaka-mālā, 64n.
 jāti, **104**, 105.
 °rūpa, 95.
 jigucchanato, 76.
 jivhā, **100**.
 jīva, 84, 113.
 jīvita
 °indriya 72, 87, 97.
 °indriya-navaka, 95.
 jhāna, 26, 48, 80.
 °ācariya, 33.
 upacāra°, 45.
 catuttha°, 53-54, 81.
 tatiya°, 52-53.
 to, 39.
 dutiya°, 51-52.
 pañcangika°, 48.
 paṭhama°, 46-50.
 ñāṇa, 89.
 (upakkilesa), 117.
 cakkhumhi°, 94.
 ñaṇesu°, 94.
 (four kinds), 91, 94.
 (various kinds) 93-94, 115-119.
 ñāti, 32.
 ṭhapanā, 70.
 ṭhāṇato, 75.
 ṭhiti-bhāgiya, 10, 50.
 taṇḍula (sim.), 104.
 taṇhā, 7, 8, 34, 84, **104**.
 °kāyā (cha), 111, 114.
 °khaya, 66.
 °mūlakā dhammā, 111.
 tagara, 75.
 tatra-majjhatta-upakkhā, 52.
 Tathāgata, 63, 73, 88, 89.
 °balāni (dasa), 65.
 tadārammaṇa-citta, 102.
 tāpana, 6n.
 tikkhindriya, 50.
 Titthiyā, 90.
 tila, pasanna °tela, 89.
 tiracchāna-yoni, 81.
 tūla-picu (sim.), 70.
 tecīvarika, 16, 17.
 tejādhikānaṃ, 96.
 tejo, 33.
 tejo-kasiṇa, 38, 57.
 thalato, 61.

thīna, 123, 123n.
 °middha, 19, 21, 27, 47, 90, 123.
 thullaccaya, 11n.
 Thera-gāthā, 62.
 Thera Si(n) gālapitā, 62.
 dadhi (colour of), 88.
 dandhā-paṭipadā, 35.
 dava, 12,
 davā, 65.
 daññara-kumāra (sim.), 45
 dāna, 12.
 °pāramitā, 64, 83.
 °saññvibhāga, 79.
 dāru-sāra-sūci, 70.
 diṭṭhi, 7, 8, 34, 99.
 akiriya°, 110.
 uccheda°, 110.
 micchā°, 110.
 visuddhi, 113.
 sakkāya°, 110.
 sassata°, 110:
 diṭṭha-dhamma
 °sukhavihāra, 126, 127.
 °sukhavihāritā, 27.
 dibba
 °cakkhu, 86, **90-91.**
 (two kinds), 90.
 °sota 86, **88.**
 disā, dasa °cariyā, 111.
 Dīghāvu, 64.
 dipa-sikhā (sim.), 97.
 dukkāṭa, 11n.
 dukkha, 84, 106, 108, 114, 113.
 °anupassanā, 114.
 °khandha, 106.
 dukkha°, 138, 111.
 vatthu°, 108.
 vipariññāma°, 108.
 sankhāra°, 108.
 saññhāva°, 108.
 sīla. 9.
 duggati, 97.
 dubbhāsita, 11n.
 dussila, 7.
 dūre, °rūpa, 114.
 devatā-anussati, 38, 67-68.
 deva-manussa, 63.
 devāyatanaṃ¹
 (devānam), (sim.), 55.
 deha
 sa°nissitā, 88.
 domanassa, 53.
 °indriya, 88.
 dosa, 71, 78, 89.
 °carita, 24, 34-37, 75.
 °cariyā, 34.
 °nidāna, 35.
 dvi-samādhi-
 samāpajjana, 121.
 dvedhāyitattam, 65.
 dhamma, 41, 44, 50, **66,**
100, 128.
 °anussati, 66-67.
 °āyatana, **100.**
 kalyāṇa°, 65.
 °ṭhitiñāṇa, 114.
 °niruttābhilāpa, 94.
 °rasa, 46.
 °vicaya, 66, 92.
 °visesa, **65.**
 dhammatā-sīla, 10.
 dhammato, 99.
 Dhammapāla, 5, 35, 49n,
 70, 95, 100n. 127n.
 Dhammasaṅgaṇi, 54, 54n, 92,
 97, 99, 110.
 dhammā
 akusala°, 79.
 kusala°, 79.
 dhamme ñāṇam, 93.
 Dharma-sangraha, 16n, 64n,
 65n.

dhātu, 83, 95, **103**, 113, 114.
 (eighteen), 103.
 (four), 83.
 °nidāna, 35.
 catu °vavatthāna, 83-84.
 °pasāda, 100.
 °sangaha, 112.
 Dhātu-kathā, 112n.
 dhuta, 5, 16-26, 125n.
 dhutanga, 19, 23, 24, 24n,
 125n.
 akusala, ° 23.
 abyākata °, 2, 23-24.
 kusala °, 23, 24.
 kusalattika-
 vinimutta, 24.
 dhuta-vāda, 24, 25.
 dhūma-sikhā, 70.
 dhenupaka-vaccha, 52.
 nadisota (sim.), 97.
 namataka, 16n.
 naya
 ekatta °, nānatta °
 abyāpāra °,
 evañ-dhammatā °, 115.
 na vattabhārammaña, 87.
 navanīta, (colour of), 88.
 nahēpaka (sim.), 49.
 °antevāsī (sim.), 49.
 nānatta
 °ekattato, 84.
 °to, 97, 110.
 °naya, 115.
 °saññā, 54, 90.
 nānābhismaya, 120-121.
 nāmatika (or nāmantika),
 16n.
 nāma, 113.
 °kāya, 120n.
 nāma-rūpa, **104**, 111.
 °vavatthāna, 113.
 Nārada, 126, 126n.
 nikanti, 117.
 bhava °, 107.
 nikkhanti, 117n.
 Niganṭha, 27, 27n.
 °(practices), 27.
 Nigrodha
 °miga, 64.
 °pakka-sadisa, 89.
 nicca, 119.
 nicca-navā, 114.
 nijigim̄sanatā, 12.
 nijjhānakkhanti, 126n.
 nijjīva, 100.
 Nidāna, 1-3, 103.
 nidhānato, 77, 85.
 ninnato, 61.
 nippesikatā, 12.
 nibbatta
 kammaphala-vipāka °, 90.
 bhāvanā °, 90.
 viriya-bhāvanā-bala °, 90.
 sucarita-kamma °, 90.
 Nibbāna, 7, 64, **66**, 77, 100, 109,
 118, 125, 126.
 anupādisesa °, 1.
 °ārammaña, 117.
 °gāminī-paṭipadā, **66**.
 nibbidā, 50, 53, 72, 74, 93.
 °anupassanā-ñāṇa, 118.
 °bahula, 122.
 nibbiñña, kāmesu, 81.
 nibbedha
 °bhāgiya, 10, 50.
 nimantanā, 18.
 nimitta, 31, 39, 44-45, 46, 57, 58,
 59, 60, 61, 62, 70, 74, 75, 115.
 uggahā °, 45.
 gāha, 60.
 paṭibhāga °, 43, 45, 70.
 vaddhana, 39.
 paṭhavī °, 64.

nimitta-gahaṇa, 57, 115.
 kilesa°, samādhi°, vipassanā°, 115.
 nirāmisa-samādhi, 31.
 Nirodha, 66, 125, 126.
 °jhāna-samāpatti, 128.
 °sacca, 111.
 saññā-vedayita-°samāpatti, 125, 127-128.
 °samāpatti, 57.
 (hetupaccaya-paṭibaddha), 114.
 Nissaggiya-pācittiya, 11n.
 nissandato, 75, 85.
 nissaya, 49, 74.
 nissita, 7, 8.
 loka°, atta°, dhamma°, 8.
 nīla-kasiṇa, 58.
 nīvaraṇa, 1, 48, 49, 95.
 (five), 48, 49, 111, **123**.
 Netti, 39n, 80n, 122n.
 nekkhamma, 4, **44**, 64, 117n.
 °pāramitā, 64, 80.
 °saññā, 97, 98.
 Netrīpada-Śāstra, 62n.
 Netrīpada-sūtra, 62.
 nemittikatā, 12.
 Nerañjarā, 64.
 Nevasaññā-nāsaññāyatana, 38, 40, 56, 60, 85.
 °upaga, 56.
 nesajjika, 16, 22, 23, 48n.
 pakati
 °ñāṇa, 80.
 °vaṇṇa, 87.
 °sīla, 10.
 paṃsukūla, 17.
 paṃsukūlika, 16, 23.
 paggaha, 117.
 (upakkilesa), 117.
 pakiṇṇaka-kathā, 37, 56, 59, 62, 78, 81-82, 87, 91.
 pakiṇṇaka-dhammā, 121-28.

pakkha-vikkhepa, 46.
 paccattam veditabbo viññūhi, 67.
 paccaya, 12, 13, 103-107.
 catu°, 12.
 °dhamma, 5.
 °paccavekkhanā, 13.
 hetu°, 103-107.
 paccavekkhaṇā, 13, 49.
 (five), 120.
 °ñāṇa, 30.
 paccaya°, 13.
 °saññā, 30.
 paccupaṭṭhāna, 5, 25, 26, 79, 80.
 paccuppannaṃsa, 65.
 paccuppanna
 °kamma-kilesa, 106.
 °phala-vipāka, 106.
 Paccekabuddha, 7, 73, 81, 88, 89, 127.
 pacceka-sacca, 110.
 Pañca
 °anga-samāpatti, 29.
 °ñāṇika-sammā-samādhi, 30.
 °dhanu-satika, 20.
 paññā, **1**, 2, 3, 49, 92.
 (adhiṭṭhāna), 80n.
 (anekaviddhā), **92-94**.
 ariyā°, 95.
 °khandha, 2, 14, 100.
 °carita, 75.
 °pariccheda, **92-94**.
 °pāramitā, 63, 80.
 °visesa, 40.
 paṭikkūlatā, 84, 85.
 paṭigha, 82.
 °anunaya, 82.
 °saññā, 54.
 Paṭicca-samuppāda, 103, 105.
 paṭinissagga, 117.
 °anupassanā, 4.
 °anupassī, 69, 71.

- dhammā, 111.
- sabbūpadhi°, 66.
- paṭipakkha, 49, 82.
- paṭipadā
 - khippā°, 35.
 - °ñāṇa, 94.
 - °dandhā, 35.
 - dukkhā°, 29.
 - °visuddhi, 49.
 - °sampayutta, 94.
 - sukhā°, 29.
- paṭipanna
 - uju°, 67.
 - su°, 67.
- paṭipāṭi, 90.
- paṭippassaddha-sila, 8.
- paṭibimba, 45.
 - saññā°, 45.
- paṭibhāga-nimitta, 43, 45, 70.
- paṭivedha, 93.
- paṭisankhā, 12.
- paṭisankhānupassanā-ñāṇa, 118.
- paṭisambhidā, 70, 80.
 - catu°, 92, 94.
 - attha°, 47, 94.
 - dhamma°, 47, 94.
 - nirutti°, 47, 94.
 - paṭibhāna°, 47, 94.
- Paṭisambhidāmagga, 4, 7, 30, 39, 49, 62, 70, 86, etc.
 - (almost throughout)
- paṭhavi, 83.
 - ° saññā, 56n.
 - °kasiṇa, 43-57, 54, 56, 85.
 - °dhamma, 44.
 - °nimitta, 54.
 - °saññā, 56, 56n.
- pañidhāna, 63.
- pañihita, 8.
- pañīta, 50, 52, 53.
- patiṭṭhā, sīlassa, 15.
- patta (sim.), 104.
- patta-piṇḍika, 16, 19.
- padaṭṭhāna, 5, 26, 43.
- padumīnī (sim.), 52.
- padhāna-sankhāra, 87.
- pabbajjā, 27.
- pabheda-rūpa, 97.
- para-citta-vijānana, 86, 88-89, 93.
- paramattha, 119.
- °visuddha-yogasiddhi-vihāra, 49.
- °sacca, 110.
- paramatthato, 80.
- parāmaṭṭha, 8.
- parikamma, 28, 28n.
 - °samādhi-ñāṇa, 89.
- paricce ñāṇam, 93.
- paricchinna-ākāsa-kasiṇa, 38, 40, 59.
- pariccheda
 - °ñāṇa, 115.
 - °to, 100, 106, 110, 116.
 - °rūpa, 97.
- paritta, 50, 52, 53.
 - °rūpa, 114.
- Paritta-subhā, 53.
- Parittābhā, 52.
- paripāka, (dhātūnaṃ), 108.
- paripūrakārino (samādhismiṃ), 125.
- paribbhamana, 46.
- paribhoga, 13.
 - °to, 85.
- pariyatti-dhamma
 - ‘maecchariya, 123 n.
- pariyanta, 19.
- pariyesanato, 84.
- pariyesanā (three), 122.
- pañāsa, 6.
- passaddhi, 7.
 - (upakkilesa), 117.
- citta,° 1.

pavicaya, 92.
 paviveka-vihāra, 28.
 pasāda, 96.
 cakkhu° (described), 96.
 pasādana, cittassa, 98n.
 pahāna, 27.
 *anga, 77.
 (nivarañānam), 28.
 palibodha, 32.
 Pācittiya, 11n.
 Pātaliputta, 85.°
 Pātidesanīya, 11n.
 nāthāriya, (three), 66.
 pānaka-sadda, 88.
 Pātimokha, 10, 11, 66.
 °dhamma, 5.
 °sañvara, 10, 14.
 pāmanga-sutta, 70.
 pāramitā (or pāramī), 63n., 65n.
 (ten), 64, 80.
 Pārājika(ā), 11n., 14.
 pāhuṇeyya, 67.
 pindapātika, 18.
 pitta, 35, 41.
 piya-puggala, 80, 81.
 piyo, 32.
 piyo garu bhāvanīyo etc., 32.
 pīta, 43n.,
 °kasiṇa, 58.
 pīti, 2, 47, 48, 49, 51n., 52.
 121.
 (six-fold), 47.
 (upakkilesa), 117.
 °patisamvedī, 71.
 °sukha-virahitata, 27.
 °pharaṇatā, 30.
 puñña-khetta, 67.
 puthujjana, 53, 89, 125.
 puppha (sim.), 104.
 pubba
 °ātariyā, 101.
 °kiccāni, 127.
 pubbe
 °nivāsānussati, 86, 89-90.
 (three kinds), 89.
 pubbāciṇṇa, 35.
 °nidāna, 35.
 purisa-damma-sārathī, 63.
 puluvaka, 38, 61.
 Peṭaka, 49.
 Peṭakopadesa, 2, 32n., 34n.,
 46n—49n, 51n., 53n.,
 86n, 112n., 120n., 122n.,
 Appendix A 3.
 pesī, 76.
 pothujjanika, 91.
 Porāṇā, 117, 118, 119.
 pharaṇā
 anodhiso° 80.
 odhiso° 80.
 pharaṇatā, 30.
 āloka°, 30.
 pīti°, sukha°, etc.° 30.
 phala, 54.
 °to 85.
 °visesa, 127.
 °samañgissa nāñam, 93.
 °samāpatti, 27, 125-127.
 phala-hetu-sandhi, 105.
 phassa, 99, 104.
 °āyatanāni, 711.
 °kāyā, 114.
 °pañcamā, 116.
 phāsu-vihāra, 12, 19, 126.
 bala, 49, 80, 84.
 °five), 65, 66.
 °savakkhaya° (ten), 66.
 Tathāgata,° 65.
 bija (sim.), 104, 105.
 bijato, 75, °hetu, 107.
 Buddha, 7, 33, 44, 62, 63, 64, 66,
 127.
 °anussati, 62-66.
 °guṇā, 63.

°gunānussati, 62.
 °ñāṇa-paññā, 65.
 °dhammā (aṭṭhārasa), 65.
 Buddhaghosa, 4, 5, 62, 70, 103,
 118, 125, etc.
 (almost throughout).
 Buddhānussati, 38, 41, 62-66, 67.
 buddhi
 °carita, 41.
 °cariyā, 34.
 bojjhangā, 84, (seven), 111.
 Bodhi (tree), 64, 80.
 bodhi
 °dhammā (thirty-seven), 109,
 119.
 °pakkhiya-dhammā, 66n.
 Bodhisatta, 64, 80.
 byāpāda, 27, 49, 81, 82.
 byāpāda-mano, 65.
 Brahma(ā), 50.
 °gods, 50.
 °pārisajjatā, 27.
 °pārisajjā, 50, 50n.
 Mahā, ° 50.
 Brahma-kāyika, 97.
 Brahma-loka, 41.
 Brahma-vihāra, 38.
 bhanga, 116, 118.
 °anupassanā-ñāṇa, 116-117.
 Bhagavā, 56, 62, 63, 67.
 Bhadanta, 62.
 Bhaddā, wife of King Muṇḍa,
 126n.
 bhaya-sīla, 9.
 Bhayabherava-sutta, 63.
 bhayatupaṭṭhāna-ñāṇa, 118.
 bhava, **104**, 105.
 (three), 115, 118.
 °tanhā, 111.
 °nikanti, 107.
 °visesa, 27.
 °samnatti 27.

bhavanga
 °upaccheda, 102n.
 °calana, 102n.
 °citta, 102.
 °pāṭa-citta, 102.
 °mana, 102.
 bhava-hetu-sandhi, 105.
 bhāvanā, 49, 81.
 °mayā paññā, 92.
 bhāvanīya, 32.
 bhikkhācāra
 °gāma, 36.
 °magga, 36.
 bhāra (sim.), 110.
 bhikkhu, **11**.
 °dhamma, 14.
 bhūmi, 54, 120, 121, 122.
 avitakka°, sa-vitakka°, 121.
 °to, 41.
 dassana°, sankappa°, 122.
 nippitīl-°, sa-pitika°, 121.
 bhāvanā°, 122n.
 sekha°, a-sekha°, 122.
 bheravārammaṇa, 39.
 Bhesa-kalāvana, 62.
 bhojana
 °āhāra, 36.
 °to, 36.
 °mattaññutā, 16, 19, 23.
 makkha, 6.
 Magadha, 64.
 magga
 °angāni, 66.
 °aṭṭhangika°, 111.
 °ñāṇa, 119, 120.
 °paṭipadā, 1.
 °sacca, 111.
 °samangissa ñāṇam, 93.
 macchariya, (five), **123**.
 majjhe, 49.
 °kalyāṇa, 2.

majjhatta, 79, 81.
 majjhima, 50, 52, 53.
 majjhimadesa-upapatti, 79.
 maṇḍala, 43, 44, 45, 58.
 mattaññu,
 bhojane °tā, 16, 19, 23, 28.
 manasikāra, 101.
 ayoniso° 105n., 112n.
 °to, 115.
 °nūlakā dhammā, 112.
 sammā°, 79.
 manāyatana, **100.**
 mano 101.
 dhātu, 97-99.
 °vinñāna, 101.
 °viññāpa-dhātu, 97-99.
 mano-mayā iddhi, 86.
 maraṇa, **72, 104.**
 (of two kinds), 72-73.
 (of three kinds), 72.
 °sati, 38, 40, 72-75.
 (distinguished from anicca-
 saññā), 74-75.
 mahanta-pātubhāvato, 83.
 mahā
 °Brahmā, 50.
 °bhūta, 83, 95, 96.
 Mahākapi, 64.
 mahākaruṇā-samādhi, 29, 80.
 Mahā-govinda, 64.
 mahāpuññā (pañca°), 87.
 Mahāvyutpatti, foot-notes on 6,
 16, 29, 64, 65, 93, 104.
 Mahā-satta, 80.
 Mahā-sudassana, 73.
 Māgandiya-sutta, 36.
 māna, 7, 34; (nine), 123.
 Māndhātā(°tr), 73n.
 Māra, 64.
 Miga (sim.), 21.
 micchā, 11-12, 14.
 °antā, 111, **124.**

 °ajīva, 11-12, 14.
 °diṭṭhi, 110.
 micchatta, 124.
 middha, 48.
 āhāraja°, utuja°, cittaja°, 48.
 (kāyika dhamma), 48.
 °rūpa, 95, 123.
 (rūpadhamma), 48.
 (rūpānuvatti), 123.
 muñcitukamyatā-ñāna, 118.
 muñala-mukha, 76.
 Muñḍa, king, 126n.
 muditā, 38, 80, 81.
 mudu-indriya, 42, 50.
 muni, 95, 120n.
 Mūgapakkha, 64.
 Mūrdhatali (Mūrdhajātah), 73n.
 mūla, (mettāya), 79.
 mūla-kilesa, 35.
 Mendaka, 86.
 mettā, 3, **78-80**, 81.
 °pāramitā, 64, 80.
 moggala, 127n.
 Moggaliputtatissa, 127.
 Moggallāna, 73.
 moha, 89.
 °carita, 24, 34-37.
 °cariyā, 34.
 °sīla, 9.
 Yathā-kammūpaga, 90.
 °ñāna, 91.
 yathābhūta
 °ñāpadassana, 126.
 °ñāpadassana-visuddhi, 113.
 yamakato, 116.
 yamaka-pāṭihāriya, 29, 80.
 Yamataggi, 73.
 yathāsanthatika, 16, 22.
 yuga, 44.
 Yuvanāśva, 73n.
 yogā (four), **123.**

yogāvacara, 16, 26, 43, 44, 45, 49, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 58, 59, 61, 63, 64, 67, 70, 71, 72, 73, 77, 81, 84, 86, 88, 95, 113, 116, etc.; too numerous references.
 yonito, 97.
 yoniso
 paṭisankhā°, 12.
 °paṭisevati, 12, 13.
 °manasikāro, 2.
 raja, 20.
 ravā, 65.
 rasa, 5, 25, 26, 43, 57-59, 61, 62, 69, 72, 75, 77, 80-82, 83, 84, 92.
 °anubhavana, 127.
 dhamma°, 46.
 rasa (sim.), 104.
 Rāga, 71, 79.
 °carita, 24, 34, 37, 75.
 °cariyā, 34.
 rāga-caritādito, 41.
 rukkha (sim.), 104.
 rukkha-mūlika, 16, 21, 23, 24.
 rukkhā
 sevitabbā, na sevitabbā, 21.
 rūpa, 101, 113.
 (thirty), 95, 96.
 (twenty-eight), 95.
 (reflection upon), 114.
 upādā°, 95.
 °khandha, **95-97.**
 jāti°, 95.
 middha°, 48, 95, 123.
 °loka, 41.
 rūpa-kalāpa-santati, 97.
 rūpāvacara
 °(trance), 47-54, 87.
 roga-saññā°, 56.
 lakkhaṇa, 4, 25, 43, 57-59, 61, 62, 69, 72, 75, 77, 78, 80-82, 84.
 °to, 83, 99, 109.
 dasa °sampannam, 48, 49, 51, 52, 53, 55, 56.
 dvāra°, 103.
 °rūpa, 97.
 sabhāva°, 103.
 lakkhaṇa-sangahato, 107.
 lapanā, 12.
 läbhena läbha, 12.
 lingato, 60, 61.
 loka
 °dhammā (eighth), 111, **123.**
 °dhātu, 88, 89.
 °vidū, 63.
 sankhāra°, 63.
 satta°, 63.
 lokiya
 °paññā, 92.
 °samādhi, 28.
 °sila, 7.
 lokuttara
 °paññā, 92.
 °samādhi, 28.
 °sila, 7.
 lobha, 88, 122.
 loma-kūpa
 navanavuti °sahassa, 96.
 (also see 85).
 Loma-haṇsa-jātaka, 64.
 lohita, 38.
 °kasiṇa, 58.
 lohitaka, 38, 61.
 vacana
 °atthato, 83, 99, 100, 109.
 °khamo, 32.
 vaccha (dhenupaka°), 52.
 vadḍhana
 nimitta°, 39.
 °to, 39.
 °vanna-kasiṇa, 41, 59.
 (reflection upon), 75.
 vanna-macchariya, 123, 123n.

vatthārammañato, 99.
 vadhma-paccupatthānato, 73.
 vattā, 32.
 vatthu
 °kāma, 46.
 °dasaka, 96.
 vāya, 115, 116, 117, 118.
 valāhaka-patāla, 70.
 Valāhassa, 64.
 Vasubandhu, 6n.
 vāta, 35, 74.
 vāta-dhārā, (sim.), 70.
 vāyāma, 10.
 vāyc, 83.
 vāyo-kacina, 38, 57, 58.
 vāritta (sila), 7.
 vālagga, 58.
 vikappa, 82.
 itthi-purisādi°, 82.
 vālamiga-yakkha-rakkhasādi°, 82.
 vikāra-rūpa, 97.
 vikubbanā-iddhi, 86.
 vikkhambhana
 °vimutti, 1, 2.
 °vimutti-magga, 2.
 vikkhāyitaka, 38, 61.
 vikkhittaka, 38, 61.
 vikkhepa-pahāna, 45.
 vicaya, 92.
 dhamma°, 92.
 vicāra, 46-47, 48, 49, 51, 77.
 (six), 114.
 vicikicchā, 48, 49, 57, 123.
 (of four kinds), 48.
 vicchiddaka, 38, 61.
 vijjā, 28.
 °caraṇa-sampanna, 63.
 °vimutti, 69, 71.
 viññāṇa, **99-100, 104.**
 (seven kinds), 99.
 °ānañcāyatana, 55.
 °ānañcāyatana-upaga, 55.
 °āyatana, 38.
 °kasiṇa, 40, 59.
 °kāyā, 114.
 °thiti (seven), 111, 115, 118.
 viññāṇa-dhātu, 100.
 (seven), 100.
 vitakka, 42, 46-47, 48, 49, 51, 57,
 71, 72, 77, 121.
 (six), 114.
 °carita, 41.
 °cariyā, 34.
 vitthārato, 82.
 vinamunā, 71.
 Vinaya, 1, 32, 33, 98.
 (rules), 11.
 °sañvara, 14.
 vinilaka, 38, 61.
 viparita-saññā, 56.
 vipallāsa, 111.
 (four), 111.
 (twelve), 124.
 °saññā, 56, 115.
 vipatti, 79, 80.
 vipassanā, 27, 49, 50, 71, 80, 111,
 121, 127.
 °dassana, 126.
 °pubbangama-samatha, 121.
 samatha-pubbangama°, 121.
 sukkha°, 121.
 vipubbaka, 38, 61.
 vippatīsāra, 9.
 vipphāra-samādhi, 127.
 Vibhanga, 11, 31, 54, 79, 81.
 vimutti, **1, 9, 49.**
 (five kinds), 1.
 anuttarā°, 1.
 °khandha, 100.
 °ñānakkhandha, 100.
 °sambhāra, 7.

Vimuttimagga, 2, 24n, 31, **35**
(very important), 76n.

vimokkha, **26**, 54, 59, 80, 121
122.
(eight), 66.

vimocayam cittaṃ, 71.

virāga, 50, 66.

viriya, 49, 87, 99.
°pāramitā, 64, 80.

vivara, 96.

vivāda-mūla (six), 123.

viveka, 46, 49.
°ja, 46.
°paṭipanna, 49.

visa-rukkha (sim.), 110.

vi-sabhāga, 61, 62.

visaya
°to, 100.
sampatta°gāhī, 100n.

visuddhi, 49.
kankhā-vitaranya° 113, 114.

citta°, 2.
diṭṭhi°, 2, 113.

sila°, 2.

Visuddhimagga, 1, 4, 5, etc.
(almost throughout).

visesa
°to, 40.
bhava°, 27.
°bhāgiya, 10, 50.

vihimsā, 80.
°uparati, 12.

vihesā, 82.
°saññā, 98.

vīthi, 101, 102, 103.
(three kinds), 101.

°bhedato, 101-103.
mano-dvāra°, 103.

vīsatiyā ākārehi, 106.

vihi (sim.), 104.

vutthāna. 57.

vedanā, 57, 97-98, **104**, 121.
(one hundred and eight), 98.
°kāyā, 114.

veda-bahula, 122.

Vedalla, 94.

vematika, 9.

Veyyākarana, 94.

verī, 81.

vesārajja, 80.
(four), 65.

Vessāmitta, 73.

Vehapphala, 53.

voṭṭhabbana-citta, 102.

Sikṣā-samuccaya, 76n, 101..
samyojana, 111; (three), 120.
(ten), 111, **124.**

saṃvara, 4, 10, **11.**
indriya° (of nine ways), 12.
catu°, 11.
sattappabheda°, 11.
°sila, 4.

Sakadāgāmī, 3, 125, 127.

sangaha, 49, 112.
°to, 84, 100, 103, 112.
khandha°, āyatana°, dhātu°, 112.
sankhepa°, 49.

sankhāra, 72, **98-99**, **104**, 105, 107,
114, 128.
(thirty-two), 98.

°ārammanna, 117.

°upekkhā, 52.
°upekkhā-ñāṇa, 118.
kāya° 70, 128.

°khandha, 107.
citta°, 71, 128.
°nimitta, 84.

°pariccheda-ñāṇa, 116.
°sabba° samatha, 66.

sakkāya
°diṭṭhi, 110, (chief of heresies),
120.

°bhāva-ditṭhi, 110.
 sankhata, 105, 128.
 sankhitta, 108.
 sankhepa
 °to, 82, 110.
 °sangaha, 49.
 Saṅgha, 44.
 °anussati, 38, 67.
 °kamma, 14.
 sāyaka°, 67.
 sanghāti, 17.
 sacca, 108-128.
 °(adhiṭṭhāna), 80n.
 °asulomika-ñāṇa, 93, 118.
 ariyā°, 95.
 catu°, 108.
 °pariccheda, 3, 113-128.
 °pāramitā, 64, 80.
 Sanghādisesa, 11n., 14.
 Saccasavhaya, 64.
 sacchi-kātabbatthena, 110.
 sañcicca, 9.
 Sañjīva, 127.
 Saññā, 45.
 (ten), 111.
 °kāyā, 114.
 nānatta°, 54.
 nimitta, 62.
 paṭigha°, 54.
 paṭibinba, 45.
 paṭhavī°, 56, 56n.
 viparīta°, 56.
 vipallāsa°, 56.
 vipariyāsa°, 98.
 vihesā°, 98.
 saññā-vedayita-nirodha, 77.
 °samāpatti, 127.
 sati, 49, 53.
 ānāpāna°, 38-42.
 kāyagatā°, 75-77.
 ṭhānani, 41.
 pārisuddhi, 53.
 maraṇa°, 41, 42.
 mā, 52.
 satipaṭṭhāna, 65.
 (four), 65, 66, 69, 71, 109, 111,
 119.
 sati-sampajañña, 28, 52.
 satta, 80, 84, 113.
 °āvāsa (nine), 111, 115, 118.
 sattakkhatu-parama, 120.
 (mudindriya), 120.
 Satta-suriya-sutta, 83.
 Satthā, 63.
 Satthu-pakkosana, 127.
 sadda
 °kaṇṭaka, 56.
 °nirodha, 56.
 pāṇaka°, 88.
 saddhā, 49, 89, 106.
 °carita, 41.
 °cariyā, 34.
 sa-nidassana-sappaṭigha, 97.
 santa, 54.
 santāpa, 6, corrections &
 additions.
 santirāṇa-citta, 102.
 santutṭhitā, 28.
 sanditṭhika, 67.
 sanditṭhi-parāmāsatā, 123.
 sandhi, 105.
 °to, 105.
 phala-hetu°, 105.
 bhava°, 105.
 hetu-phala°, 105.
 sappadānacārika, 16, 17, 18, 23.
 sa-pariyantato, 77.
 sappurisa, 79.
 sabbaññuta-ñāṇa, 80.
 sabhāga, 83.
 °vi-sabhāgato, 83.
 sabhāva-rūpa, 97.
 sabhāva-lakkhaṇa, 103.

samatikkama, 39, 57.
 anga°, 39, 57.
 āraimmana°, 39, 57.
 °to, 39.
 rūpa°, 39.
 saññā-vedayita°, 39.
 samatha, 71, 80, 111, 127.
 °pubbangama-vipassanā, 121.
 vipassanā-pubbangama°, 121.
 °paṭipanna, 49.
 samantato, 60, 61.
 samabhāga
 °carita, 34.
 °cariyā, 34.
 samādhi, 1, 2, 3, 26-31, 49, 80,
 86.
 °antarāyakarā, 27.
 asaññī°, 30.
 °ānisamṣa, 27.
 kiriya°, 30.
 °khandha, 2, 14, 100.
 °ja, 51.
 (nānāvidha), 28-31.
 nibbedha-bhāgiya°, 1.
 °pariccheda, 26-31.
 Mahākaruṇā°, 29, 80.
 yamaka-pāṭihāriya, 29, 80.
 °sambhāra, 28.
 °smiṃ paripūrakārino, 125.
 °hetū (eight), **27-28**.
 samāpatti, **26**, 79.
 anupubba° (nine), 66.
 (dve), 121, 125-128.
 pañcanga°, 29.
 samuccheda-maraṇa, 72.
 samuṭṭhānato, 96.
 samudaya (=taṇhā), 64.
 sampajāñña, 52.
 sampaṭicchana-citta, 101.
 sampatta-visayaggāhī, 100n.
 sampatti, 79, 80.
 sampasāda, 51n.
 sampaṭhāmsana, 49.
 samphappalāpa, 90.
 samphassa
 cakkhu °ja, etc., 97, 98.
 sambojjhanga
 (seven), 65, 66, 71.
 sambodhi, 3.
 °angāni (seven), 65.
 sambodhi-ñāṇa, 1.
 sammati (or sammuti)
 °ñāṇa, 93.
 °sacca, 110.
 sambhāra (samādhissa°), **28**.
 sammapadhānā, 10; °ni, 65.
 cattāro°, 10, 66, 109.
 sammā-ājīva, 2, 7, **109**.
 sammā-kammanta, 2, 7, **109**.
 sammā-diṭṭhi, 2, **109**.
 sammā-dhamma, 115.
 sammā-maggangāni, 66.
 sammā-manasikāra, 79, **109**.
 sammā-vācā, 2, **109**.
 sammā-vāyāma, 2, 7, **109**.
 sammā-sankappa, 2, **109**.
 sammā-sati, 2, **109**.
 sammāsāmādhi, 2, **109**.
 pañca-ñāṇika°, 30.
 Sammā-sambuddha, 81, 90.
 Sayambhū, 62.
 sa-rasato, 115.
 sarāva, 44.
 saṭṭayatana, **104**.
 Sacca-jātaka, 64.
 sa-sambhārika-upacāra, 49.
 sassata-diṭṭhi, 110.
 sādhāraṇa-maraṇa, 72.
 sallakkhaṇā, 70.
 sākhā (sim.), 104.
 sāmañña-phala, 66.
 Sāriputta, 73, 96, 127.

sālī (sim.), 104.
 sāvaka-sila, 7.
 sikkhati, 70.
 sikkhāpada, 10, 11.
 Sigāla-pitā, 62.
 (vl. Singāla-pitā), 62n.
 sirattha, 5.
 sitalattha, 5.
 sīmā-sambheda, 79.
 sīrā, 1, 1-15, 3.
 °antarāyikā, 6.
 °anussati, 38, 67.
 °ānisamsa, 5.
 *khandha, 2, 14, 100.
 (nāvānidha), 7-14.
 °pariccheda, 4-15.
 °pāramitā..... 64, 80.
 °lakkhaṇa, 4.
 °rasa-pacecupatthāna-padaṭṭhāna,
 5.
 °visuddhi, 14.
 °hetū, 7.
 sīlabbata-parāmāsa, 120, 123, 124.
 sukha, 3, 48, 49, 51n., 119.
 (of five kinds), 47.
 °indriya, 97.
 nicca °vihāra, 79.
 °pharanatā, 30.
 °vihārī, 52.
 sukhuma-rūpa, (eighteen), 100.
 suññata(ā), 40, 128.
 °dhātu, 114.
 suññato (vimokkha), 122.
 suta-mayā paññā, 92.
 sutena, 41.
 Sutta, 1, 32.
 Suttanipāta, 95, 120n.
 Sudassā, 120.
 Sudassī, 120.
 suddha
 °āvāsa (gods), 120.
 °āvāsa-bhūmi, 54.

su-paṭipanna, 67.
 suppa, 44.
 subha
 °nimitta, 14.
 °saññā, 41.
 Subhakīpha, 53.
 sekha-bhūmi, 122.
 Suśruta, 76n.
 su-saṇṭhita, 84.
 Setṭhi-jātaka, 64.
 senāsana, 36.
 semha, 35, 41, 74, 96.
 scyūdito, 36.
 sevanā, 49.
 sota 86, 88, 100n.
 °dasaka, 96.
 dibba°, 86, 88.
 °dhātu, 88.
 sotāpatti
 °magga-ñāṇa, 119, 122.
 °phala, 120, 125.
 °magga, 121, 125.
 Sotāpanna, 3, 120, 127.
 (of three kinds), 120.
 Sobhita, 89.
 somanassa, 53. 81.
 °indriya, 88, 97.
 sosānika, 16, 21, 23, 24.
 Sphuṭārthābhidharmakośa-
 vyākhyā, 34n, 101n, 112n.
 hata-vikkhittaka, 38, 61.
 Halidda-vasana-sutta, 82.
 hānabhāgiya, 7, 9, 50.
 °sīla, 7, 9.
 hāni, 65.
 chandassa°, viriyassa°, satiyā
 samādhissa°, paññāya°,
 vimuttiyā°, 65.
 hita-sukha, 82.
 hiri, 33.
 hiri-kopīna, 13.
 huṇhika, 47n.

| | |
|---------------------|---------------------------------|
| hetu | hetu-paccaya, 95, 103-107, 113. |
| °to, 115. | °paṭibaddha, 114. |
| °phala-ñāṇa, 94. | °pariggahe ñāṇa, 114. |
| samādhissa°, 27-28. | hetu-phala-sandhi, 105. |
| sila°, 7. | hetumhi ñāṇam, 94. |

GENERAL INDEX

accumulation, 95.
acrobatic feats, 60
ant, (sim.) 15.
antidote, 41, 78.
ān-phān, 69,
Arhat, 3, 24, 48, 63, 120, 125.
 unknown destiny of, 120.
Arhatship, 120.
 Path to, 120.
army, 48.
bag of fesces and urine (sim.), 75.
bird, surrounded by fire (sim.), 118.
Blessed One, (see Bhagavā), 64, 66,
 103, 109, 126.
blind (sim.)
 and lame, 113.
°man (sim.), 2.
 man touching and feeling the
 elephant, 99.
boat, crossing the floods (sim.), 119.
body
 reflection upon° (thirteen ways),
 75-77.
bones, three hundred. 76.
bride,
 newly married (sim.), 33.
bubble (sim.) 74.
Buddhist Literature (nine-fold)°
 194.
bull, able to carry a burden (sim.),
 99.
cart (sim.), 48.
cart-driver (sim.), 32.
carts, five hundred, 55.
centipede, 74.
child, young (sim.), 45.
city, burning, 119.
colour of mind or heart, 88-89.
courtiers (sim.), 101-102.
cow, mountain° (sim.), 51.
craving (tañhā), 84.
deaf door-keeper (sim.), 101, 102.
death, reflection upon° (four
 kinds), 72; (eight ways) 73-74.
Deliverance, 1.
 Path of, 2.
Dependent Origination (also see
 Law of Causation), 113, 114.
 (negative way), 114.
disease of leprosy (sim.), 100.
Divine Eye, 64.
doctor (sim.), 32.
doll, wooden, 84.
double-tongued, 124.
dragon, 74.
dumb maid-servant (sim.), 101-102.
ear, 100.
 heavenly° 88.
 natural° 88.
earth (sim.), 107.
Eightfold Path, 109.
elephant
 goad applied to, 115.
 without a good (sim.), 32, 41.
execution, post of, 73
executioner (sim.), 73.
exertion, right°, 87.
eye, 100
 (described), 96.
 divine° 88.
 natural°, 90.
eye, single (sim.), 15.
father (sim.), 32, 80.
fatty things (sim.), 41.
fire (sim.)
 heap of, 118.
 sparks of, 120.
foam of water (sim.), 74.

foetus, growth of, 76,
 Appendix A 1.
 food, disgusting nature of, 84.
 gardener, (sim.), 101, 102.
 goad (sim.), 32, 41.
 applied to an elephant, 115.
 guide, without a, 2.
 helmsman (sim.), 32.
 hot drink (sim.), 32, 41.
 image of the Buddha, 62.
 image, maker of (sim.), 100.
 interpretation
 artificial and scholastic, 63, 71,
 100.
 simple and natural, 11, 25n, 71,
 100, 109.
 iron, (red-hot) beaten and dipped
 into water, 120.
 jar, broken, with wine in it, 85.
 king (sim.), sleeping, 101-102.
 wicked, 99.
 knife, 101, 102.
 lame and blind, 113.
 lamp, the flame of (sim.), 96, 106, 114.
 burning, 119.
 Law of Causation, 104, 113, 114.
 (also see Dependent Origination)
 leprosy, 100.
 light of the sun (sim.), 99.
 lightning, flash of, 116.
 lip (upper part), 69, 70.
 man (sim.),
 bitten by a serpent but not
 using antidote, 78.
 eating poisoned food, 78.
 frightful, carrying a sword, 118.
 muttering a sutta, 47.
 overcome by the heat, 126.
 pondering over the meaning of
 a sutta, 47.
 poor, 15.
 possessed by spirits, 83.
 seeing a relative after a long
 time, etc. 81.
 un-intelligent, 117.
 wishing a bath but entering
 unclean water, 78.
 with feet outside the threshold,
 119
 mango (fruit), 101, 102.
 master (sim.), 37.
 mastery
 over kasinas and samādhis, 60.
 ,, nimitta, 59.
 ,, trances, 51-53.
 miraculous powers, 86-94.
 mirror (sim.), 89.
 moon (sim.), 73, 107.
 moth (sim.), 115.
 mother (sim.), 32, 80.
 mountain, 107.
 Nā-lo-tho, 126.
 name and form, 84.
 neutral person 78-79.
 Nieh-ti-li-po-tho-
 shiu-to-lo, 72, (also see 62).
 ocean, 107.
 oily things (sim.), 41.
 parts (thirty-two), of the body 75,
 82.
 Path, Eightfold 84.
 perfection of samādhi, 125.
 person, surrounded by robbers, 118.
 phyiñ-pa, 16n.,
 physician (sim.), 110.
 suffering from a disease, 78.
 poison (sim.), 37, 78; ^oed food, 78.
 Po-li-ñhu-to, 85.
 poor man (sim.), 15.
 pores of hair, ninety-nine thou-
 sand, 85 (also 76).
 preliminaries, 127.

protracted similes, 101-102, 104.
 Przyluski, 124 n.
 puppet (sim.) painted, dressed up,
 worked by strings within, 84,
 Pure Abodes, 54.
 Right Path, 64.
 sailor (sim.), 15.
 Sān-Tsāng, 46, 47, 49.
 saw (*kakaca*) (sim.), 70, 78.
 seed 104, 107.
 seeing a person ' from distance
 (sim.) 47.
 serpent
 man seizing a poisonous° 115,
 poisonous°, 118
 Shiu-to-lo-nieh-ti-li 62, (also see
 72).
 simultaneous
 penetration into truths, 119.
 slave (sim.), 37.
 snow (sim.), 107.
 son, only (sim.), 15.
 sound
 far and near, etc. 88
 human and superhuman, 88.
 of worms, 88.
 space in the hollow of a well
 (sim.), 59.
 speck, smallest, changing, 116.
 sprout, 104, 107.
 spyi-bo-skyes, 73n.
 sticks (sim.), 96.
 shadows of, 96.

stream, the flow of (sim.), 96.
 suffering, 119.
 cessation of, 119.
 insight into, 119.
 origin of, 119.
 Path leading to cessation of,
 119
 sun (sim.), 73, 107, 119.
 taste, knowing of, 100.
 Tā-te-shi-kyu-phu, 62.
 Teachers
 former, 82, 88, 101.
 of the past, 82.
 teeth, thirty-two, 76.
 thorn (sim.), 100.
 tip of the nose, attention to 69,
 70,
 Truths (four), 32, 84, 108-28.
 Ushakable Happy State, 120.
 vase, painted but full of impurity,
 78.
 well, in a mountain-forest, 125.
 water, flowing to a lower level
 (sim.), 99.
 Wheel of the Law, 66.
 wheel, the turning of (sim.), 100.
 wine in a leaking pot, 85.
 woman's body to a man, 61, 62.
 wooden doll (sim.), 84.
 worms, in human body, 76,
 Appendix A 2.
 worms, sounds of, 88.
 Yellow-garment-sutta, 82.

Corrections and Additions

| Page | Line | For | Read |
|--------|-----------------------|--|---------------------------------|
| x | 2 | Maddhyamaka..... | Madhyamaka..... |
| xiv | 8 | Abhayagirīvihāra | Abhayagirivihāra |
| xv | 3 | lite- | lite- |
| xvi | 7 | the first Chinese character | 扶 |
| xxiii | 14 | <i>nirodha-samāpatthi</i> | <i>nirodha-samāpatti</i> |
| xxv | 9 | kasinas | kasiṇas |
| xxvi | 1 from the bottom: | Add to note 13: "Cf. Vis. XVII.78: <i>aññāmaññupatthambhakām ti-dāyādakām viyā</i> ; also see XVII.196, XVIII.32." | |
| xxvii | 1 ¹ | Vimuttimagga ³ | Vimuttimagga ² |
| xxvii | foot-note 1 | p. not quoted | not quoted |
| xxix | foot-note 8 | 79 | 49 |
| xxx | foot-note 4 | | Add "58". |
| xxxi | foot-note 1 | <u>xxvix-xi</u> | xxix-xl |
| xxxvi | 16 | Nevasaññānāsaññya- tanūpagā | Nevasaññānāsaññā- yatanūpagā |
| xliii | 13 | Add a new note on Peṭaka: "Mrs. C.F. Rhys Davids also identifies Peṭaka with Peṭakopadesa as can be seen from her edition of the Vis. (P.T.S.), i.141, note 3. It is also interesting to note what Gandhavamīsa says on p. 65: Peṭakopadesassa tīkām Udumbara-nāmācariyo akāsi." | |
| xlv | 11 | Akaniṭṭha | Akaniṭṭhā |
| xlvi | 5 | Pāññā | Paññā |
| xlvi | 8 | lo, | lo), |
| xlviii | 6 from the bottom | Sāññā | Saññā |
| lii | 2 | contact | contact. |
| 6 | 4 from the bottom | Vijñapti | Vijñapti |

| Page | Line | For | Read |
|------|--------------------|--|----------------------------|
| 6 | 6 from the bottom | To note 2, add: For <i>santāpa</i> as a <i>kilesa</i> and for other kilesas corresponding to several in this list, see respectively pp. 223 and 222-224 of Yamakami Sōgen's 'Systems of Buddhistic Thought' (1912) | |
| 12 | | the first Chinese character | |
| 13 | 15 | - <i>paṭicchādanattham</i> | - <i>paṭicchādanattham</i> |
| 14 | 1 from the bottom | note 2 | note 4 |
| 15 | 7 | detailed | detailed |
| 34 | 8 | Rāgā-cariyā | Rāga-cariyā |
| 34 | 10 | Moha-cariyā | Moha-cariyā |
| 38 | margin | kammaṭṭhānas | kammaṭṭhānas |
| 38 | 12 | pūlavaka | pūlavaka |
| 40 | 13 | <i>kāyagatāssati</i> | <i>kāyagatāsati</i> |
| 40 | 4 from the bottom | In note 2, add 'XXIII. 14.' | |
| 41 | 8 from the bottom | <i>paṭikkūlassaññā</i> | <i>paṭikkūlasaññā</i> |
| 45 | 11 from the bottom | <i>kā appṇā?</i> | <i>kā appaṇā?</i> |
| 49 | foot-note 1 | Add: "Peṭaka p. 178 (p. 200 of the printed edition) has, however, the following passage: <i>Kāmacchandassa nek-ṭhamma-vitakko paṭipakkho, byā-pādassa abyāpāda-vitakko paṭipakkho, tiṇṇam nīvaraṇānam avihimsā-vitakko paṭipakkho.</i> " | |
| 50 | 5 | <i>Brahma</i> 'gods | <i>Brahmā</i> gods |
| 52 | 10 from the bottom | <i>Ekangavippahīnam</i> | <i>Ekangavippahīnaŋ</i> |

| Page | Line | For | Read |
|------|--------------------|---|---------------------------|
| 53 | 12 | <i>satipārisudhīm</i> | <i>satipārisuddhīm</i> |
| 57 | 20 | <i>Catutthjjhānādi-</i> | <i>Catutthajjhānādi-</i> |
| 62 | foot-note 2 | Add: "Abhidharmakośavyākhyā edited by Wogihara, vol. i.162: <i>Netripadam iti Śāstra-nāma Sthaviropaguptasya.</i> " | |
| 66 | 13 from the bottom | <i>sammā maggangāni</i> | <i>sammā-maggangāni</i> |
| 70 | 6 from the bottom | <i>assasissmi</i> | <i>assasissāmi</i> |
| 73 | 2 from the bottom | Add: "Also see Mandhātu Jātaka, Jā. ii. 310-14." | |
| 82 | 6 | <i>paṭghā-</i> | <i>paṭighā-</i> |
| 87 | 19 | <i>adhitṭhanā</i> | <i>adhitṭhānā</i> |
| 92 | 9 | <i>apacyā</i> | <i>apacayā</i> |
| 94 | 4 from the bottom | <i>bhāvanā-śam-</i> | <i>bhāvanā-sam-</i> |
| 96 | 12 from the bottom | <i>Samuṭṭhānto</i> | <i>Samuṭṭhānato</i> |
| 96 | 5 from the bottom | <i>kammusamuṭṭānā</i> | <i>kammasamuṭṭhānā</i> |
| 97 | 13 | the first Chinese character | |
| 98 | 15 from the bottom | <i>phoṭṭhabba-saññā</i> | <i>phoṭṭhabba-saññā</i> |
| 98 | 14 from the bottom | <i>cakkhu-sāmpphaṭṭajā</i> | <i>cakkhu-samphassajā</i> |
| 99 | 2 | in the XIV. 133-184 | in XIV. 133-184 |
| 99 | 6 from the bottom | <i>Vacanthalō</i> | <i>Vacanatthato</i> |
| 99 | 2 from the bottom | <i>Lakkhaṇato</i> | <i>Lakkhaṇato</i> |

| Page | Line | For | Read |
|------|-----------------------|---|---------------------------------|
| 100 | 9 | <i>vimutti kkhandho</i> | <i>vimuttikkhandho</i> |
| 100 | 11 | from the bottom interpretes | interprets |
| 100 | 1 | from the bottom <i>ke ci</i> | <i>keci</i> |
| 102 | 12 | second Chinese character | |
| 103 | 21, 24 | „ „ „ | { 緣 |
| 105 | 24 | fourth „ „ „ | |
| 110 | 15 | <i>dvāra-pidapana...</i> | <i>dvāra-pidahana...</i> |
| 110 | 16 | <i>samttho</i> | <i>samattho</i> |
| 110 | 7 from the bottom | <i>suññatathato</i> | <i>suññatathato</i> |
| 110 | marginal note | XVI.86 a. | XVI.86 p.a. |
| 113 | 15-16 | Add a note on the parable of blind and lame man: “See Brahmasūtra, II.2.7 and Śankara’s Bhāṣya on it; also Sāṅkyakārikā, 21; Macdonell’s ‘India’s Past’, p. 152 where he says that the parable was known in China in the second century B.C.” | |
| 113 | 1 | from the bottom <i>vedanā-paccyā</i> | <i>vedanā-paccayā</i> |
| 114 | 12 | from the bottom <i>viññāṇakāyā</i> | <i>viññāṇakāyā</i> |
| 115 | 15 | <i>kammathānas</i> | <i>kammatthānas</i> |
| 117 | 8 | <i>passaddhi</i> | <i>passaddhi</i> |
| 118 | 6 | BHAYATUPTTHĀ- NĀÑĀÑAM | BHAYATUPA- TTHĀNAÑĀÑAM |
| 118 | 6 from the bottom | <i>sankhāraupekkhā- ñāṇa</i> | <i>sankhārupekkhā- ñāṇa</i> |
| 120 | 15 | <i>mudidriyo</i> | <i>mudindriyo</i> |
| 122 | 10 from the bottom | <i>kāma-pariyesana</i> | <i>kāma-pariyesanā</i> |

| Page | Line | For | Read |
|------|----------------------|---|---|
| 122 | 5 from the bottom | <i>pajānāi</i> | <i>pajānāti</i> |
| 123 | 6 from the bottom | <i>maccariyena</i> | <i>macchariyena</i> |
| 124 | 7 | <i>-kammapatha</i> | <i>-kamma-pathā</i> |
| 124 | 4 from the bottom | ‘Le Conceile... | ‘Le Concile... |
| 126 | 3 | <i>diṭṭhadhammasukha- vihārattham</i> | <i>diṭṭhadhammasukha- vihārattham</i> |
| 127 | 7 | along will | along with |
| 133 | 14 | chapter of (III.74) of | chapter (III.74) of |
| 133 | 23 | part of the | part in the |
| 133 | 25-26 | and <i>aññātāvindriya</i> | and <i>aññātāvindriya</i> |
